HISTORY

OF

TOM JONES,

A

FOUNDLING.

By HENRY FIELDING, Efq.

-Mores hominum multorum vidit-

VOLUME I.

DRESDEN,
Printed for G. C. WALTHER.
MDCCLXXIV.

HISTORY



FOUNDLING.

By HENRY FIELDING, EG;

-Mores kominum multorum vidit-

VOLUME L

DRESDEN,
Printed for G. C. WALTHER.
MDCCLXXIV.

To the Honourable

my found I whither owner out to take

GEORGE LYTTLETON, Efq;

One of the Lords Commissioners of the TREASURY.

Otwithstanding your constant refusal, when I have asked leave to prefix your name to this dedication, I must still insist on my right to desire your protection of this work.

To you, Sir, it is owing that this history was ever begun. It was by your defire that I first thought of such a composition. So many years have since past that you may have, perhaps, forgotten this circumstance: but your desires are to me in the nature of commands; and the impression of them is never to be erased from my memory.

Again, Sir, without your affiftance this history had never been completed. Be not startled at the affertion. I do not intend to draw on you the suspicion of being a romance writer. I mean no more than that I partly owe to you my existence during great

2 2

part

part of the time which I have employed in composing it: another matter which it may be necessary to remind you of; since there are certain actions of which you are apt to be extremely forgetful; but of these I hope I shall always have a better memory than

yourself.

Lastly, It is owing to you that the history appears what it now is. If there be in this work, as some have been pleased to say, a stronger picture of a truly benevolent mind than is to be found in any other, who that knows you, and a particular acquaintance of yours, will doubt whence that benevolence hath been copied? The world will not, I believe, make me the compliment of thinking I took it from myself. I care not: this they shall own, that the two persons from whom I have taken it, that is to fay, two of the best and worthiest men in the world, are strongly and zealously my friends. I might be contented with this, and yet my vanity will add a third to the number; and him one of the greatest and noblest, not only in his rank, but in every public and private virtue. But here whilst my gratitude for the princely benefactions of the Duke of BEDFORD bursts from my heart, you must forgive

forgive my reminding you, that it was you who first recommended me to the notice of my benefactor.

in

ay

ere

to pe

an

ry

his

nd

at of

ce I

k-

is

m

of re

ht

ty

m in

te

or

of ıst

ve

And what are your objections to the allowance of the honour which I have folicited? Why, you have commended the book fo warmly, that you should be ashamed of reading your name before the dedication. Indeed, Sir, if the book itself doth not make you ashamed of your commendations, nothing that I can here write will, or ought, I am not to give up my right to your protection and patronage, because you have commended my book: for though I acknowledge so many obligations to you, I do not add this to the number; in which friendship, I am convinced, hath fo little share: fince that can neither biass your judgment, nor pervert your integrity. An enemy may at any time obtain your commendation by only deserving it; and the utmost which the faults of your friends can hope for, is your filence; or, perhaps, if too feverely accused, your gentle palliation.

In short, Sir, I suspect that your dislike of public praise is your true objection to granting my request. I have observed, that you have, in common with my two other

a 3

friends,

friends, an unwillingness to hear the least mention of your own virtues; that, as a great Poet says of one of you, (he might justly have said it of all three) you

Do good by stealth, and blush to find it fame.

If men of this disposition are as careful to fhun applause, as others are to escape censure, how just must be your apprehension of your character falling into my hands; since what would not a man have reason to dread, if attacked by an author who had received from him injuries equal to my obligations to you!

And will not this dread of censure increase in proportion to the matter which a man is conscious of having afforded for it? If his whole life, for instance, should have been one continued subject of satire, he may well tremble when an incensed satirist takes him in hand. Now, Sir, if we apply this to your modest aversion to panegyric, how reasonable will your fears of me appear!

Yet furely you might have gratified my ambition, from this fingle confidence, that I shall always prefer the indulgence of your inclinations to the satisfaction of my own.

A very

A very strong instance of which I shall give you in this address; in which I am determined to follow the example of all other dedicators, and will consider not what my patron really deserves to have written, but what he will be best pleased to read.

0

)

2

Without further preface then, I here prefent you with the labours of some years of
my life. What merit these labours have is
already known to yourself. If, from your
favourable judgment, I have conceived some
esteem for them, it cannot be imputed to
vanity; since I should have agreed as implicitly to your opinion, had it been given
in favour of any other man's production.
Negatively, at least, I may be allowed to say,
that had I been sensible of any great demerit in the work, you are the last person to
whose protection I would have ventured to
recommend it.

From the name of my patron, indeed, I hope my reader will be convinced, at his very entrance on this work, that he will find in the whole course of it, nothing prejudicial to the cause of religion and virtue; nothing inconsistent with the strictest rules of decency, nor which can offend even the chastest eye in the perusal. On the contrary, I declare, that

to recommend goodness and innocence hath been my sincere endeavour in this history. This honest purpose you have been pleased to think I have attained: and to say the truth, it is likeliest to be attained in books of this kind; for an example is a kind of picture, in which virtue becomes as it were an object of sight, and strikes us with an idea of that loveliness, which Plato asserts there is in her naked charms.

Besides displaying that beauty of virtue which may attract the admiration of mankind, I have attempted to engage a stronger motive to human action in her favour, by convincing men, that their true interest directs them to a pursuit of her. For this purpose I have shewn, that no acquisitions of guilt can compensate the loss of that folid inward comfort of mind, which is the fure companion of innocence and virtue; nor can in the least balance the evil of that horror and anxiety which, in their room, guilt introduces into our bosoms. And again, that as these acquisitions are in themselves generally worthless, so are the means to attain them not only base and infamous, but at best uncertain, and always full of danger. Lastly, I have endeavoured strongly to inculcate, that virtue and innocence can scarce ever be injured but by indifcretion; and that it is this alone which

which often betrays them into the snares that deceit and villainy spread for them. A moral which I have the more industriously laboured, as the teaching it is, of all others, the likeliest to be attended with success; since, I believe, it is much easier to make good men wise, than

to make bad men good.

For these purposes I have employed all the wit and humour of which I am master in the following history; wherein I have endeavoured to laugh mankind out of their favourite follies and vices. How far I have succeeded in this good attempt, I shall submit to the candid reader, with only two requests: First, that he will not expect to find perfection in this work; and Secondly, That he will excuse some parts of it, if they fall short of that little merit which I hope may appear in others.

I will detain you, Sir, no longer. Indeed I have run into a preface, while I professed to write a dedication. But how can it be otherwise? I dare not praise you; and the only means I know of to avoid it, when you are in my thoughts, are either to be entirely silent, or to turn my thoughts to some other

subject.

Pardon, therefore, what I have said in this epistle, not only without your consent, but a 5

absolutely against it; and give me at least leave, in this publick manner to declare, that I am, with the highest respect and gratitude,

he much color to make good man with, then

following bisers, wherein There referrored

feld The campon area who adow the sal

talenters of or matrix say a treatment of an extra the sufficient of the filter of the other

be Fielden Albeyolf e, what I have faid in this ophile, and easy without your concern, thus

cod Ma bevolue SIR, the and about and the

Your most obliged, it was the state of the s

obedient humble Servant,



HENRY FIELDING.

ese manbaisslam or

Book II

HISTORY

service for the contraction of t

OF A

FOUNDLING.

had a dissocitive bear through the

BOOK L

Containing as much of the birth of the Foundling as is necessary or proper to acquaint the reader with in the beginning of this history.

CHAP. I.

The introduction to the work, or bill of fare to the feast.

A N author ought to confider himself, not as a gentleman who gives a private or eleemosynary treat, but rather as one who keeps a public ordinary, at which all persons are welcome for their money. In the former case, it is well known, that the entertainer provides what fare he pleases; and though this should be very indifferent, and utterly disagreeable to the taste of his company, they must not find any fault; nay, on the contrary, good breeding forces them outwardly to approve and to commend

basin

mend whatever is fet before them. Now the contrary of this happens to the mafter of an ordinary. Men who pay for what they eat, will infift on gratifying their palates, however nice and whimfical these may prove; and if every thing is not agreeable to their taste, will challenge a right to censure, to abuse, and to d-n their dinner without controul.

To prevent therefore giving offence to their cuftomers by any fuch disappointment, it hath been usual, with the honest and well-meaning host, to provide a bill of fare, which all persons may peruse at their first entrance into the house: and, having thence acquainted themselves with the entertainment which they may expect, may either flay and regale with what is provided for them, or may depart to some other ordinary better accommodated to their tafte.

As we do not disdain to borrow wit or wildom from any man who is capable of lending us either, we have condescended to take a hint from these honest victuallers, and shall prefix not only a general bill of fare to our whole entertainment, but shall likewise give the reader particular bills to every course which is to be

ferved up in this and the enfuing volumes.

The provision then which we have here made is no other than Human Nature. Nor do I fear that my fensible reader, though most luxurious in his taste, will flart, cavil, or be offended, because I have named but one article. The tortoife, as the alderman of Briffol, well learned in eating, knows by much experience, besides the delicious Calibash and Calipee, contains many different kinds of food; nor can the learned reader be ignorant, that in human nature, though here collected under one general name, is fuch prodigious

gious variety, that a cook will have fooner gone thro' all the feveral species of animal and vegetable food in the world, than an author will be able to exhauft fo

extensive a subject.

An objection may perhaps be apprehended from the more delicate, that this difh is too common and vulgar: for what elfe is the fubject of all the romances, novels, plays, and poems, with which the stalls abound? Many exquisite viands might be rejected by the epicure, if it was a fufficient cause for his contemning of them as common and vulgar, that something was to be found in the most paltry alleys under the same name. In reality, true nature is as difficult to be met with in authors, as the Bayonne ham or Bologna faufage is to be found in the fhops.

But the whole, to continue the same metaphor, confifts in the cookery of the author; for, as Mr.

Pope tells us,

chain.

True wit is nature to advantage dreft, What off was thought, but ne'er fo well exprest.

our reader man be replied defi

The fame animal which hath the honour to have some part of his flesh eaten at the table of a duke. may perhaps be degraded in another part, and some of his limbs gibbeted, as it were, in the vilelt stall in town. Where then lies the difference between the food of the nobleman and the porter, if both are at dinner on the same ox or calf, but in the seasoning the dreffing, the garnifhing, and the fetting forth? Hence the one provokes and incites the most languid appetite, and the other turns and palls that which is the Tharpest and keenest. Lagly lives (cure chaps lives fill) again and an are who

In like manner, the excellence of the mental entertainment confifts less in the subject, than in the author's skill in well dressing it up. How pleased there. fore will the reader be to find, that we have, in the following work, adhered closely to one of the highest principles of the best cook which the present age, or perhaps that of Heliogabalus, hath produced? This great man, as is well known to all lovers of polite eating, begins at first by setting plain things before his hungry guests, rising afterwards by degrees, as their ftomachs may be supposed to decrease, to the very quinteffence of fauce and spices. In like manner, we fhall represent human nature at first to the keen appetite of our reader, in that more plain and simple manner in which it is found in the country, and shall hereafter halh and ragoo it with all the high French and Italian feafoning of affectation and vice which courts and cities afford. By these means, we doubt not but our reader may be rendered defirous to read on for ever, as the great person, just above-mentioned, is fupposed to have made some persons eat.

Having premised thus much, we will now detain those who like our bill of fare, no longer from their diet, and shall proceed directly to serve up the first course of our history, for their entertainment.

CHAP. II.

A Short description of Squire Allworthy, and a fuller account of Miss Bridget Allworthy his sister.

IN that part of the western division of this kingdom, which is commonly called Somersetshire, there lately lived (and perhaps lives still) a gentleman whose name

name was Allworthy, and who might well be called the favourite of both nature and fortune; for both of these seem to have contended which should bless and enrich him most. In this contention, nature may feem to fome to have come off victorious, as the beflowed on him many gifts; while fortune had only one gift in her power; but in pouring forth this, The was fo very profule, that others perhaps may think this fingle endowment to have been more than equivalent to all the various bleffings which he enjoyed from nature. From the former of these, he derived an agreeable person, la sound constitution, a solid understanding and a benevolent heart; by the latter, he was decreed to the inheritance of one of the largest estates in the

nerhans beauty had led into ecrois, which Il youros This gentleman had, in his youth, married a very worthy and beautiful woman, of whom he had been extremely fond: by her he had three children, all of whom died in their infancy. He had likewise had the misfortune of burying this beloved wife herfelf, about five years before the time in which this history chuses to fet out. This loss, however great, he bore like a man of fense and constancy; though it must be confest, he would often talk a little whimsically on this head: for he fometimes faid, he looked on himfelf as fill married, and confidered his wife as only gone a little before him a journey which he should most certainly, fooner or later, take after her; and that he had not the least doubt of meeting her again, in a place where he should never part with her more. Sentiments for which his fense was arraigned by one part of his neighbours, his religion by a fecond, and his fincerity by a third.

Vot. I.

He now lived, for the most part, retired in the country, with one fifter, for whom he had a very tender affection. This lady was now somewhat past the age of 30, an æra, at which, in the opinion of the malicious, the title of old maid may, with no impropriety, be affumed. She was of that species of women, whom you commend rather for good qualities than beauty, and who are generally called by their own fex, very good fort of women - as good a fort of women, Madam, as you would wish to know. Indeed The was fo far from regretting want of beauty, that The never mentioned that perfection (if it can be called one) without contempt; and would often thank God The was not as handsome as Miss Such-a-one, whom perhaps beauty had led into errors, which fhe might have otherwise avoided. Miss Bridger Allworthy (for that was the name of this lady) very rightly conceived the charms of person in a woman to be no better than fnares for herfelf, as well as for others; and yet fo difcret was fhe in her conduct, that her prudence was as much on the guard, as if The had all the fnares to apprehend which were ever laid for her whole fex. Indeed, I have observed (though it may feem unaccountable to the reader) that this guard of prudence, like the trained bands, is always readiest to go on duty where there is the least danger. It often basely and cowardly deferts those paragons for whom the men are all wifhing, fighing, dying, and spreading every net in their power; and constantly attends at the heels of that higher order of women, for whom the other fex have a more distant and awful respect, and whom (from despair, I suppose, of success) they never venture to attack. to vel with only . Reader,

Reader, I think proper, before we proceed any facther together, to acquaint thee, that I intend to digres, through this whole history, as often as I see occasion: of which I am myself a better judge than any pityful critic whatever. And here I must define all those critics to mind their own business, and not to intermeddle with affairs, or works, which no ways concern them, for till they produce the authority by which they are constituted judges, I shall plead to their jurisdiction.

CHAP. III.

An odd incident which befel Mr. Allworthy, at his return home. The decent behaviour of Mrs. Deborah Wilkins, with some proper animadversions on bastards.

I that Mr. Allworthy inherited a large fortune; that he had a good heart, and no family. Hence, doubt-less, it will be concluded by many, that he lived like an honest man, owed no one a shilling, took nothing but what was his own, kept a good house, entertained his neighbours with a hearty welcome at his table, and was charitable to the poor, i.e. to those who had rather beg than work, by giving them the offals from it; that he died immensely rich, and bailt an hospital.

And true it is, that he did many of these things; but, had he done nothing more, I should have less him to have recorded his own merit on some fair free-stone over the door of that hospital. Matters of a much more extraordinary kind are to be the subject

8

of this history, or I should grossly mispend my time in writing fo voluminous a work; and you, my fagacious friend, might, with equal profit and pleasure, travel through some pages, which certain droll authors have been facetionfly pleafed to call The Hiftory of England. Mr. Allworthy had been absent a full quarter of a year in London, on some very particular business, though I know not what it was; but judge of its importance, by its having detained him to long from home, whence he had not been absent a month at a time during the space of many years. He came to his house very late in the evening, and after a short fupper with his fifter, retired much fatigued to his chamber. Here, having fpent fome minutes on his knees, a cuftom which he never broke through on any account, he was preparing to step into bed, when, upon opening the cloaths, to his great furprife, he beheld an infant, wrapt up in some coarse linen, in a sweet and profound fleep, between his fheets. He flood some time lost in astonishment at this fight; but, as good-nature had always the afcendant in his mind, he foon began to be touched with fentiments of compaffion for the little wretch before him. He then rang his bell, and ordered an elderly woman fervant to rife immediately and come to him, and in the mean time was fo eager in contemplating the beauty of innocence, appearing in those lively colours with which infancy and fleep always display it, that his thoughts were too much engaged to reflect that he was in his Thirt, when the matron came in. She had indeed given her mafter fufficient time to drefs himfelf; for out of respect to him, and regard to decency, she had fpent many minutes in adjusting her hair at the lookinging-glass, notwithstanding all the hurry in which she had been summoned by the servant, and though her master, for aught she knew, lay expiring in an apo-

plexy or in some other fit.

It will not be wondered at, that a creature, who had fo strict a regard to decency in her own person, fhould be fhocked at the least deviation from it in another. She therefore no fooner opened the door and faw her mafter flanding by the bed-fide in his thirt, with a candle in his hand, then The flarted back in a most terrible fright, and might perhaps have fwooned away, had he not now recollected his being undreft; and put an end to her terrors, by defiring her to flay without the door, till he had thrown some cloaths over his back, and was become incapable of shocking the pure eyes of Mrs. Deborah Wilkins, who, though in the 52d year of her age, vowed fhe had never beheld a man without his coat. Sneerers and profane wits may perhaps laugh at her first fright; yet, my graver reader when he confiders the time of night, the fummons from her bed, and the fituation in which the found her mafter. will highly justify and applaud her conduct; unless the prudence, which must be supposed to attend maidens at that period of life at which Mrs. Deborah had arrived, should a little lessen his admiration.

When Mrs. Deborah returned into the room, and was acquainted by her mafter with the finding the little infant, her confernation was rather greater than his had been; nor could she refrain from crying out, with great horror of accent as well as look, 'My good' Sir! what's to be done?" Mr. Allworthy answered, she must take care of the child that evening, and in

the morning he would give orders to provide it a nurse. 'Yes Sir,' says she, 'And I hope your worfhip will fend out your warrant to take up the huffy. its mother (for fhe must be one of the neighbourhood) and I should be glad to see her committed to Bridewell, and whipt at the cart's tail. Indeed fuch wicked fluts cannot be too feverely punished. I'll warrant 'tis not her first, by her impudence in laying it to your worship.' In laying it to me! Debo-'rah,' answered Allworthy, 'I can't think she hath any fuch defign. I suppose she hath only taken this method to provide for her child; and truly I am glad fhe hath not done worfe.' I don't know what is worse,' cries Deborah, 'than for such wicked strumpets to lay their fins at honest men's door; and though your worship knows your own innocence, yet the world is cenforious; and it hath been many an honest man's hap to pass for the father of children he never begot, and if your worship should provide for the child, it may make the people the apter to believe; besides, why should your worship provide for what the parish is obliged to maintain? For my own part, if it was an honest man's child indeed; but for my own part, it goes against me to touch these misbegotten wretches, whom I don't look upon as my fellow-creatures. Faugh, how it flinks! It doth not smell like a christian; if I might be so bold to give my advice, I would have it put in a basket, and sent out and laid at the churchwarden's door. It is a good night, only a little rainy and windy; and if it was well wrapt up, and put in a warm bafket, it is two to one but it lives, till it is found in the morning. But if it should not, we ' have

have discharged our duty in taking proper care of it: and it is, perhaps, better for such creatures to die

in a state of innocence, than to grow up and imitate

their mothers; for nothing better can be expected of them.

There was some strokes in this speech which, perhaps would have offended Mr. Allworthy, had he strictly attended to it; but he had now got one of his singers into the infant's hand, which, by its gentle pressure, seeming to implore his assistance, had certainly out-pleaded the eloquence of Mrs. Deborah, had it been ten times greater than it was. He now gave Mrs. Deborah positive orders to take the child to her own bed, and to call up a maid-servant to provide it pap, and other things against it waked. He likewise ordered that proper cloaths should be procured for it early in the morning, and that it should be brought to himself as soon as he was stirring.

Such was the decernment of Mrs. Wilkins, and fuch the respect she bore her master, under whom she enjoyed a most excellent place, that her scruples gave way to his peremptory commands; and she took the child under her arms, without any apparent disgust at the illegality of its birth; and declaring it was a sweet little infant, walked off with it to her own

chamber.

Allworthy here betook himself to those pleasing flumbers which a heart that hungers after goodness is apt to enjoy when thoroughly satisfied: as these are possibly sweeter than what are occasioned by any other hearty meal, I should take more pains to display them to the reader, if I knew any air to recommend him to for the procuring such an appetite.

B 4

CHAP.

CHAP. IV. gundale street in

The reader's neck brought into danger by a defeription; his escape, and the great condescension of Miss Bridget Allworthy.

THE Gothic stile of building could produce nothing nobler than Mr. Allworthy's house. There was an air of grandeur in it that struck you with awe, and rivalled the beauties of the best Grecian architecture; and it was as commodious within, as venerable without.

It stood on the fouth-east side of a hill, but nearer the bottom than the top of it, so as to be sheltered from the north-east by a grove of old oaks, which rose above it in a gradual ascent of near half a mile, and yet high enough to enjoy a most charming pros-

pect of the valley beneath.

In the midft of the grove was a fine lawn, floping down towards the house, near the summit of which rofe a plentiful fpring, gufhing out of a rock covered with firs, and forming a constant cascade of about thirty foot, not carried down a regular flight of steps, but tumbling in a natural fall over the broken and moffy stones, till it came to the bottom of the rock; then running off in a pebly channel, that with many teffer falls winded along, till it fell into a lake at the foot of the hill, about a quarter of a mile below the house on the south-side, and which was seen from every room in the front. Out of this lake, which filled the center of a beautiful plain, embellished with groupes of beeches and elms, and fed with fheep, issued a river, that, for several miles, was seen to meander

meander through an amazing variety of meadows and woods, till it emptied itself into the sea; with a large arm of which, and an island beyond it, the prospect was closed.

On the right of this valley opened another of less extent, adorned with several villages, and terminated by one of the towers of an old ruined abbey, grown over with ivy, and part of the front, which remained

still entire.

The left hand scene presented the view of a very fine park, composed of very unequal ground, and agreeably varied with all the diversity that hills, lawns, wood, and water, laid out with admirable taste, but owing less to art than to nature, could give. Beyond this the country gradually rose into a ridge of wild mountains, the tops of which were above the clouds.

It was now the middle of May, and the morning was remarkably serene, when Mr. Allworthy walked forth on the terrace, where the dawn opened every minute that lovely prospect we have before described to his eye. And now having sent forth streams of light, which ascended the blue sirmament before him, as harbingers preceding his pomp, in the full blaze of his majesty up rose the sun: than which one object alone in this lower creation could be more glorious, and that Mr. Allworthy himself presented; a human being replete with benevolence, meditating in what manner he might render himself most acceptable to his Creator, by doing most good to his creatures.

Reader, take care, I have inadvisedly led thee to the top of as high a hill as Mr. Allworthy's, and how to get thee down without breaking thy neck, I do not well know. However, let us e'en venture to flide down together: for Miss Bridget rings her bell, and Mr. Allworthy is summoned to breakfast, where I must attend, and if you please, shall be glad of

your company.

The usual compliments having past between Mr. Allworthy and Miss Bridget, and the tea being poured out, he summoned Mrs. Wilkins, and told his sister he had a present for her; for which she thanked him, imagining, I suppose, it had been a gown, or some ornament for her person. Indeed, he very often made her such presents; and she, in complacence to him, spent much time in adorning herself. I say, in complacence to him, because she always express the greatest contempt for dress, and for those ladies who made it their study.

But if fuch was her expectation, how was she disappointed, when Mrs. Wilkins, according to the order she had received from her master, produced the little infant! Great surprizes, as hath been observed, are apt to be silent; and so was Miss Bridget, 'till her brother began, and told her the whole story, which, as the reader knows it already, we shall not repeat.

Miss Bridget had always exprest so great a regard for what the ladies are pleased to call virtue, and had herself maintained such a severity of character, that it was expected, especially by Wilkins, that she would have vented much bitterness on this occasion, and would have voted for sending the child, as a kind of noxious animal, immediately out of the house; but, on the contrary, she rather took the good-natured side of the question, intimated some compassion for the

Something words

the helpless little creature, and commended her bro-

ther's charity in what he had done.

Perhaps the reader may account for this behaviour from her condescension to Mr. Allworthy, when we have informed him, that the good man had ended his narrative with owning a resolution to take care of the child, and to breed him up as his own; for, to acknowledge the truth, she was always ready to oblige her brother, and very seldom, if ever, contradicted his sentiments; she would indeed sometimes make a few observations, as, that men were headstrong, and must have their own way, and would wish she had been blest with an independent fortune; but these were always vented in a low voice, and at the most amounted only to what is called muttering.

However, what she with-held from the infant, she bestowed with the utmost profuseness on the poor unknown mother, whom she called an impudent flut, a wanton hussy, an audacious harlor, a wicked jade, a vile strumpet, with every other appellation with which the tongue of virtue never fails to lash those

who bring a difgrace on the fex.

A confultation was now entered into, how to proceed in order to discover the mother. A scrutiny was first made into the characters of the semale servants of the house, who were all acquitted by Mrs. Wilkins, and with apparent merit; for she had collected them herself; and perhaps it would be difficult to find such another set of scarecrows.

The next step was to examine among the inhabitants of the parish; and this was referred to Mrs. Wilkins, who was to enquire with all imaginable diligence, and to make her report in the afternoon.

Matters

Matters being thus fettled, Mr. Allworthy withdrew to his study, as was his custom, and left the child to his sister, who, at his desire, had undertaken the care of it.

CHAP. V.

Containing a few common matters, with a very uncommon observation upon them.

W/HEN her master was departed, Mrs. Deborah ftood filent, expecting her cue from Miss Bridget; for as to what had past before her master, the prudent house-keeper by no means relied upon it, as The had often known the fentiments of the lady, in her brother's absence, to differ greatly from those which fhe had expressed in his presence. Miss Bridget did not, however, fuffer her to continue long in this doubtful fituation; for having looked fome time earnestly at the child, as it lay asleep in the lap of Mrs. Deborah, the good lady could not forbear giving it a hearty kifs, at the fame time declaring herfelf wonderfully pleafed with its beauty and innocence. Mrs. Deborah no fooner observed this, than she fell to fqueezing and kiffing, with as great raptures as fometimes inspire the sage dame of forty and five towards a youthfull and vigorous bridegroom, crying out in a fhrill voice, 'O the dear little creature, the dear, ! fweet, pretty creature! Well, I vow, it is as fine a boy as ever was feen!'

These exclamations continued, 'till they were interrupted by the lady, who now proceeded to execute the commission given her by her brother, and gave orders for providing all necessaries for the child, appointing pointing a very good room in the house for his nurfery. Her orders were indeed so liberal, that, had
it been a child of her own, The could not have exceeded them: but, least the virtuous reader may
condemn her for shewing too great regard to a baseborn infant, to which all charity is condemned by law
as irreligious, we think proper to observe, that she
concluded the whole with saying, 'Since it was her
brother's whim to adopt the little brat, she supposed little master must be treated with great tenderness: for her part, she could not help thinking
it was an encouragement to vice; but that she knew
too much of the obstinacy of mankind to oppose
any of their ridiculous humours.'

With reflections of this nature she usually, as has been hinted, accompanied every act of compliance with her brother's inclinations; and surely nothing could more contribute to heighten the merit of this compliance, than a declaration that she knew, at the same time, the folly and unreasonableness of those inclinations to which she submitted. Tacit obedience implies no force upon the will, and, consequently, may be easily, and without any pains, preserved; but when a wife, a child, a relation, or a friend, performs what we desire, with grumbling and reluctance, with expressions of dislike and distaissaction, the manifest difficulty which they undergo, must greatly enhance the obligation.

As this is one of those deep observations which very sew readers can be supposed capable of making themselves, I have thought proper to lend them my assistance; but this is a favour rarely to be expected in the course of my work. Indeed I shall seldom or

never

10793

never fo indulge him, unless in fuch instances as this. where nothing but the inspiration with which we writers are gifted, can possibly enable any one to make the discovery. and flust and small believe reachean base for Language Cours

CHAP. VI.

Mrs. Deborah is introduced into the parish with a simile. A short account of Jenny Jones, with the difficulties and discouragements which may attend young women in the pursuit of learning.

RS. Deborah, having disposed of the child ac-M cording to the will of her mafter, now prepared to visit those habitations which were supposed to conceal its mother.

Not otherwise than when a kite, tremendous bird. is beheld by the feathered generation foaring aloft, and hovering over their heads; the amorous dove, and every innocent little bird, spread wide the alarm, and fly trembling to their hiding-places. He proudly beats the air, conscious of his dignity, and meditates intended mischief.

So when the approach of Mrs. Deborah was proclaimed through the street, all the inhabitants ran trembling into their houses, each matron dreading lest the visit should fall to her lot. She with stately steps proudly advances over the field, aloft she bears her tow'ring head, filled with conceit of her own pre-eminence, and schemes to effect her intended discovery.

The

20

to

th

in

ſh

the

The fagacious reader will not, from this simile, imagine these poor people had any apprehension of the design with which Mrs. Wilkins was now coming towards them; but as the great beauty of the simile may possibly sleep these hundred years, till some future commentator shall take this work in hand, I think proper to lend the reader a little assistance in

this place.

It is my intention therefore to fignify, that, as it is the nature of a kite to devour little birds, so is it the nature of such persons as Mrs. Wilkins to insult and tyrannize over little people. This being indeed the means which they use to recompense to themselves their extreme servility and condescension to their superiors; for nothing can be more reasonable, than that slaves and flatterers should exact the same taxes on all below them, which they themselves pay to all above them.

Whenever Mrs. Deborah had occasion to exert any extraordinary condescension to Mrs. Bridget, and by that means had a little soured her naturel disposition, it was usual with her to walk forth among these people, in order to refine her temper, by venting, and, as it were, purging off all ill humours; on which account, she was by no means a welcome visitant: to say the truth, she was universally dreaded and hated by them all.

On her arrival in this place, she went immediately to the habitation of an elderly matron; to whom, as this matron had the good fortune to resemble herself in the comeliness of her person, as well as in her age, she had generally been more favourable than to any of the rest. To this woman she imparted what had hap-

pened,

pened, and the design upon which she was come thither that morning. These two began presently to scrutinize the characters of the several young girls, who lived in any of those houses, and at last fixed their strongest suspicion on one Jenny Jones, who they both agreed was the likeliest person to have committed this fact.

This Jenny Jones was no very comely girl, either in her face or person; but nature had somewhat compenfated the want of beauty with what is generally more esteemed by those ladies, whose judgment is arrived at years of perfect maturity; for the had given her a very uncommon fhare of understanding. This gift Jenny had a good deal improved by erudition. She had lived feveral years a fervant with a schoolmafter, who discovering a great quickness of parts in the girl, and an extraordinary defire of learning, (for every leifure hour she was always found reading in the books of the scholars) had the good nature, or folly (just as the reader pleases to call it), to instruct her so far, that she obtained a competent skill in the Larin language, and was, perhaps, as good a scholar as most of the young men of quality of the age. This advantage, however, like most others of an extraordinary kind, was attended with some small inconveniencies: for as it is not to be wondered at that a young woman fo well accomplished should have little relish for the society of those whom fortune had made her equals, but whom education had rendered fo much her inferiors; fo is it matter of no greater aftonifhment, that this superiority in Jenny, together with that behaviour which in its certain confequence, fhould produce among the rest some little envy and

0

d

0

1-

n

1.

n

DĽ

or &

16

ar

e.

K-

n-c

it,

re

ad

ed

er

er

e,

nd

11-

ill-will towards her; and these had, perhaps, secretly burnt in the bosoms of her neighbours, ever since her return from her service.

Their envy did not, however, display itself openly, till poor Jenny, to the surprize of every body, and to the vexation of all the young women in these parts, had publickly shone forth on a Sunday in a new silk gown, with a laced cap, and other proper appendages to these.

The flame, which had before lain in embryo, now burst forth. Jenny had, by her learning, encreased her own pride, which none of her neighbours were kind enough to feed with the honour she seemed to demand; and now, instead of respect and adoration, she gained nothing but hatred and abuse by her finery. The whole parish declared she could not come honestly by such things; and parents, instead of wishing their daughters the same, felicitated themselves that their children had them not.

Hence perhaps it was, that the good woman first mentioned the name of this poor girl to Mrs. Wilkins; but there was another circumstance that confirmed the latter in her suspicion: for Jenny had lately been often at Mr. Allworthy's house. She had officiated as nurse to Miss Bridget, in a violent sit of illness, and had sat up many nights with that lady; besides which, she had been there seen the very day before Mr. Allworthy's return, by Mrs. Wilkins herself, though that sagacious person had not at first conceived any suspicion of her on that account: for, as she herself said, 'She had always esteemed Jenny as a very Vol. I.

o.

re

fober girl, (though indeed the knew very little of her) and had rather fulpected fome of those wanton trollops, who gave themselves airs, because, for-sooth they thought themselves handsome.

Jenny was now summoned to appear in person before Mrs. Deborah, which she immediately did. When Mrs. Deborah, putting on the gravity of a judge, with somewhat more than his austerity, began an oration with the words: 'You audacious strumpet,' in which she proceeded rather to pass sentence on the prisoner than to accuse her.

Though Mrs. Deborah was fully fatisfied of the guilt of Jenny, from the reasons above shewn, it is possible Mr. Allworthy might have required some stronger evidence to have convicted her; but she faved her accusers any such trouble, by freely confessing the whole fact with which she was charged.

This confession, though delivered rather in terms of contrition, as it appeared, did not at all mollify Mrs. Deborah, who now pronounced a second judgment against her, in more opprobrious language than before: Nor had it any better success with the bye-standers, who were now grown very numerous. Many of them cried out: 'They thought what Madam's silk gown would end in;' others spoke farcastically of her learning. Not a single semale was present, but sound some means of expressing her abhorrence of poor Jenny; who bore all very patiently, except the malice of one woman, who reslected upon her person, and, tossing up her nose, said: 'The man' must have a good stomach, who would give silk gowns

gowns for fuch fort of trumpery.' Jenny replied to this, with a bitterness which might have surprized a judicious person, who had observed the tranquillity with which she bore all the affronts to her chassity; but her patience was, perhaps, tired out; for this is a virtue which is very apt to be satigued by exercise.

Mrs. Deborah having succeeded beyond her hopes in her enquiry, returned with much triumph, and, at the appointed hour, made a faithful report to Mr. Allworthy, who was much surprized at the relation; for he had heard of the extraordinary parts and improvements of this girl, whom he intended to have given in marriage, together with a small living, to a neighbouring curate. His concern therefore, on this occasion, was at least equal to the satisfaction which appeared in Mrs. Deborah, and to many readers may seem much more reasonable.

Mrs. Bridget bleffed herfelf, and faid: 'For her 'part, she should never hereafter entertain a good 'opinion of any woman.' For Jenny before this had the happiness of being much in her good graces also.

The prudent housekeeper was again dispatched to bring the unhappy culprit before Mr. Allworthy, in order, not, as it was hoped by some, and expected by all, to be sent to the house of correction; but to receive wholesome admonition and reproof, which those who relish that kind of instructive writing, may peruse in the next chapter.

CHAPA

CHAP. VII.

Containing such grave matter, that the reader cannot laugh once through the whole chapter, unless peradventure he should laugh at the author.

WHEN Jenny appeared, Mr. Allworthy took her into his study, and spoke to her as follows:

You know, child, it is in my power, as a magifirate, to punish you very rigorously for what you
have done; and you will, perhaps, be the more apt
to fear I should execute that power, because you
have, in a manner, laid your fins at my door.

But perhaps this is one reason which hath deter-A mined me to act in a milder manner with you: for, s as no private refentment should ever influence a magiffrate, I will be so far from considering your having deposited the infant in my house as an aggravation of your offence, that I will suppose, in your favour, this to have proceeded from a natural affection to your child; fince you might have fome hopes to fee it thus better provided for, than was in the power of yourself, or its wicked father, to pro-' vide for it. I should indeed have been highly offended with you, had you exposed the little wretch in the manner of fome inhuman mothers, who feem no less to have abandoned their humanity, than to have parted with their chastity. It is the other part of your offence, therefore, upon which I intend to admonish you, I mean the violation of your chastity. A crime, however lightly it may be treated ed ed by debauched persons, very heirous in itself, and

very dreadful in its confequences.

'The heinous nature of this offence must be sufficiently apparent to every christian, inasmuch as it is committed in defiance of the laws of our religion, and of the express commands of him who founded that religion.

' And here its consequences may well be argued to be dreadful; for what can be more fo, than to incur the divine displeasure, by the breach of the divine commands; and that in an infrance, against which the highest vengeance is specifically denounced?

But these things, though too little, I am asraid, regarded, are so plain, that mankind, however they may want to be reminded, can never need information on this head. A hint, therefore, to awaken your fense of this matter, shall suffice; for I would inspire you with repentance, and not drive you to desperation.

'There are other consequences, not indeed so dreadful, or replete with horror, as this; and yet fuch as, if attentively confidered, must, one would think, deter all, of your fex, at least, from the

commission of this crime.

n

0

d

, For by it you are rendered infamous, and driven, like lepers of old, out of fociety; at least from the fociety of all but wicked and reprobate persons; for

no others will affociate with you.

' If you have fortunes, you are hereby rendered incapable of enjoying them; if you have none, you are disabled from acquiring any, nay almost of procuring your fustenance; for no persons of character will receive you into their houses. Thus you are 'often

C 3

often driven by necessity itself into a state of shame and misery, which unavoidably ends in the de-

' struction of both body and foul.

'Can any pleasure compensate these evils? Can any temptation have sophistry and delusion strong enough to persuade you to so simple a bargain? Or

can any carnal appetite fo over-power your reason, or so totally lay it asseep, as to prevent your flying

with affright and terror from a crime which carries

fuch punishment always with it?

' How base and mean must that woman be, how void of that dignity of mind, and decent pride, without which we are not worthy the name of human creatures, who can bear to level herfelf with the lowest animal, and to sacrifice all that is great and noble in her, all her heavenly part, to an appetite which fhe hath in common with the vilest branch of the creation! For no woman fure, will plead the passion of love for an excuse. This would be to own herself the meer tool and bubble of the man. Love, however barbaroufly we may corrupt and pervert its meaning, as it is a laudable, is a rational passion, and can never be violent, but when reciprocal; for though the scripture bids us love our enemies, it means not with that fervent love, which we naturally bear towards our friends; much less that we should facrifice to them our lives, and what ought to be dearer to us, our innocence. Now in what light, but that of an enemy, can a reasonable woman regard the man, who folicits her to entail on herfelf, all the mifery I have described to you, and who would purchase to himself a short, trivial, contemptible pleafure, fo greatly at her expence!

For, by the laws of custom, the whole shame, with all its dreadful consequences, falls intirely upon her. Can love, which always seeks the good of its object, attempt to betray a woman into a bargain where she is so greatly to be the loser? If such corrupter, therefore, should have the impudence to pretend a real affection for her, ought not the woman to regard him, not only as an enemy, but as the worst of all enemies: a false, designing, treacherous, pretended friend, who intends not only to debauch her body, but her understanding at the same time?

Here Jenny expressing great concern, Allworthy paused a moment, and then proceeded: 'I have talked thus to you, child, not to infult you for what is past, and irrevocable, but to caution and strengthen you for the future. Nor should I have taken this trouble, but from some opinion of your good fense, notwithstanding the dreadful slip you have made; and from fome hopes of your hearty repentance, which are founded on the openness and fincerity of your confession. If these do not deceive me, I will take care to convey you from this scene of your shame, where you shall, by being unknown, avoid the punishment which, as I have said, is allotted to your crime in this world; and I hope, by repentance, you will avoid the much heavier fentence denounced against it in the other. Be a good girl the rest of your days, and want shall be no motive to your going affray: and believe me, there is more pleafure, even in this world, in an innocent and virtuous life, than in one debauched and vicious.

, As to your child, let no thoughts concerning it molest you; I will provide for it in a better manner than you can ever hope. And now nothing remains, but that you inform me who was the wicked man that feduced you; for my anger against him will be much greater than you have experienced on this occasion.

Jenny now lifted up her eyes from the ground, and with a modest look, and decent voice, thus began:

'To know you, Sir, and not love your goodness, would be an argument of total want of fense or goodness in any one. In me it would amount to the highest ingratitude, not to feel in the most senfible manner, the great degree of goodness you have been pleased to exert on this occasion. As to my s concern for what is past, I know you will spare my blushes the repetition. My future conduct will much better declare my fentiments, than any professions I can now make. I beg leave to affure you, Sir, that I take your advice much kinder, than your gene-

rous offer with which you concluded it.

For, as you are pleased to say, Sir, it is an instance of your opinion of my understanding.' - Here her tears flowing apace, the stopped a few moments, and then proceeded thus: 'Indeed, Sir, your kindness overcomes me; but I will endeavour to deferve this good opinion: for if I have the understanding you are fo kindly pleased to allow me, such advice cannot be thrown away upon me. I thank you, Sir, heartlly, for your intended kindness to my poor, helpless ' child: he is innocent, and I hope, will live to be grateful for all the favours you shall shew him. But, ' now, Sir, I must on my knees intreat you, not to perfift

· perfift in afking me to declare the father of my infant. I promife you faithfully, you shall one day

know; but I am under the most folemn ties and en-

' gagements of honour, as well as the most religious vows and protestations, to conceal his name at this

time. And I know you too well to think you would

defire I should facrifice either my honour, or my

religion.

Mr. Allworthy, whom the least mention of those facred words was sufficient to stagger, hesitated a moment before he replied, and then told her, she had done wrong to enter into such engagements to a villain; but since she had, he could not insist on her breaking them. He said, it was not from a motive of vain curiosity he had enquired, but in order to punish the fellow; at least, that he might not ignorantly confer favours on the undeserving.

As to these points, Jenny satisfied him by the most folemn assurances, that the man was entirely out of his reach, and was neither subject to his power, nor in any probability of becoming an object of his

goodness.

The ingenuity of this behaviour had gained Jenny fo much credit with this worthy man, that he easily believed what she thold him: for as she had distained to excuse herself by a lie, and had hazarded his farther displeasure in her present situation, rather than she would forseit her honour, or integrity, by betraying another, he had but little apprehension that she would be guilty of falsehood towards himself.

He therefore difmiffed her with affurances, that he would very foon remove her out of the reach of that obloquy fhe had incurred, concluding with fome addi-

tional documents, in which he recommended repentance, faying: 'Confider, child, there is one still to reconcile yourfelf to, whose favour is of much greater importance to you than mine. of the manipular

Linux nor short CHAP. VIII.

A dialogue between Mesdames Bridget and Deborah, containing more amusement, but less instruction, than the former.

WI HEN Mr. Allworthy had retired to his fludy with Jenny Jones, as hath been feen, Mrs. Bridget, with the good house-keeper, had betaken themselves to a post next adjoining to the said study; whence, through the conveyance of a key-hole, they fucked in at their ears the instructive lecture delivered by Mr. Allworthy, together with the answers of Jenny, and indeed every other particular which paffed

in the last chapter.

blic name active

This hole in her brother's fludy door was indeed as well known to Mrs. Bridget, and had been as frequently applied to by her, as the famous hole in the wall was by Thifbe of old. This ferved to many good purposes. For by such means Mrs. Bridget became often acquainted with her brother's inclinations, without giving him the trouble of repeating them to her. It is true, some inconveniencies attended this intercourfe, and the had fometimes reason to cry out with Thifbe, in Shakespear: 'O wicked, wicked wall!' For as Mr. Allworthy was a justice of peace, certain things occurred in examinations concerning baffards, and fuch like, which are apt to give great offence to the chaste ears of virgins, especially when they approach Linoir

proach the age of forty, as was the case of Mrs. Bridget. However, she had, on such occasions, the advantage of concealing her blushes from the eyes of men; and De non apparentibus, & non existentibus eadem est ratio. In English: , When a woman is not

feen to blufh, fhe doth not blufh at all.'

Both the good women kept strict silence during the whole scene between Mr. Allworthy and the girl; but as soon as it was ended, and that gentleman out of hearing, Mrs. Deborah could not help exclaiming against the clemency of her master, and especially against his suffering her to conceal the father of the child, which she swore she would have out of her before the sun-set.

At these words Mrs. Bridget discomposed her seatures with a smile; (a thing very unusual to her.) Not that I would have my reader imagine, that this was one of those wanton smiles, which Homer would have you conceive came from Venus, when he calls her the laughter-loving Goddess; nor was it one of those smiles, which lady Seraphina shoots from the stage-box, and which Venus would quit her immortality to be able to equal. No, this was rather one of those smiles, which might be supposed to have come from the dimpled cheeks of the august Tisiphone, or from one of the misses her sisters.

With fuch a smile then, and with a voice, sweet as the evening breeze of Boreas in the pleasant month of November, Mrs. Bridget gently reproved the curiosity of Mr. Deborah, a vice with which it seems the latter was too much tainted, and which the former inveighed against with great bitterness, adding: 'That among all her faults, she thanked heaven, her ene-

' mies

, You

imies could not accuse her of prying into the affairs of other people.

She then proceeded to commend the honour and spirit with which Jenny had acted. She said, she could not help agreeing with her brother, that there was some merit in the sincerity of her confession, and in her integrity to her lover: that she had always thought her a very good girl, and doubted not but she had been seduced by some rascal, who had been infinitely more to blame than herself, and very probably had prevailed with her by a promise of marriage, or some other treacherous proceeding.

This behaviour of Mrs. Bridget greatly furprized Mrs. Deborah; for this well-bred woman feldom opened her lips either to her mafter, or his fifter, till the had first sounded their inclinations, with which her sentiments were always strictly consonant. Here, however, she thought she might have launched forth with safety; and the sagacious reader will not perhaps accuse her of want of sufficient forecast in so doing, but will rather admire with what wonderful celerity she tacked about, when she found herself steering a wrong course.

'Nay, Madam,' faid this able woman, and truly great politician, 'I must own I cannot help admiring the girl's spirit, as well as your ladyship. And, as your ladyship says, if she was deceived by some wicked man, the poor wretch is to be pitied. And to be sure, as your ladyship says, the girl hath always appeared like a good, honest, plain girl, and not vain of her sace, forsooth, as some wanton hust seys in the neighbourhood are.'

'You say true, Deborah,' said Mrs. Bridget, 'if the girl had been one of those vain trollops, of which we have too many in the parish, I should have condemned my brother for his lenity towards her. I saw two farmer's daughters at church, the other day, with bare necks. I protest they shocked me. If wenches will hang out lures for fellows, it is no matter what they suffer. I detest such creatures; and it would be much better for them, that their saces had been seamed with the small-pox; but I must confess, I never saw any of this wanton behaviour in poor Jenny; some artful villain, I am convinced, hath betrayed, nay perhaps forced her; and I pity the poor wretch with all my heart.'

Mrs. Deborah approved all these sentiments, and the dialogue concluded with a general and bitter invective against beauty, and with many compassionate considerations for all honest, plain girls, who are deluded by the wicked arts of deceitful men.

distriged all his. XIgIA.A.H.D in is a fecret well

Containing matters which will surprize the

JENNY returned home well pleased with the reception she had mer with from Mr. Allworthy, whose indulgence to her she industriously made public; partly perhaps as a facrifice to her own pride, and partly from the more prudent motive of reconciling her neighbours to her, and silencing their clamours.

But though this latter view, if the indeed had it, may appear reasonable enough, yet the event did not answer

fi

answer her expectation; for when she was convened before the justice, and it was universally apprehended. that the house of correction would have been her fate; tho' fome of the young women cry'd out: 'It was good enough for her, and diverted themselves with the thoughts of her beating hemp in a filk gown; yet there were many others who began to pity her condition: but when it was known in what manner Mr. Allworthy had behaved, the tide turned against her. One faid: 'I'll affure you, Madame hath had ' good luck.' A fecond cry'd: ' See what it is to be ' a favourite.' A third: 'Ay, this comes of her learn-'ing.' Every person made some malicious comment or other, on the occasion, and reflected on the partiality of the justice. He bewergen deroded and

The behaviour of these people may appear impolitic and ungrateful to the reader, who confiders the power and the benevolence of Mr. Allworthy: but as to his power, he never used it; and as to his benevolence, he exerted fo much, that he had thereby disobliged all his neighbours: for it is a secret well known to great men, that by conferring an obligation, they do not always procure a friend, but are

certain of creating many enemies.

Jenny was, however, by the care and goodness of Mr. Allworthy, foon removed out of the reach of reproach; when malice, being no longer able to vent its rage on her, began to feek another object of its bitterness, and this was no less than Mr. Allworthy himself; for a whisper soon went abroad, that he himfelf was the father of the foundling child.

This supposition so well reconciled his conduct to the general opinion, that it met with universal affent; and o who

and the outcry against his lenity soon began to take another turn, and was changed into an invective against his cruelty to the poor girl. Very grave and good women exclaimed against men who begot children and then disowned them. Nor were there wanting some, who, after the departure of Jenny, infinuated, that she was spirited away with a design too black to be mentioned, and who gave frequent hints, that a legal inquiry ought to be made into the whole matter, and that some people should be forced to produce the girl.

These calumnies might have probably produced ill consequences (at the least might have occasioned some trouble) to a person of a more doubtful and suspicious character than Mr. Allworthy was blessed with; but in his case they had no such effect; and, being heartily despised by him, they served only to afford an innocent amusement to the good gossips of the neighbourhood.

But as we cannot possibly divine what complection our reader may be of, and as it will be some time before he will hear any more of Jenny, we think proper to give him a very early intimation, that Mr. Allworthy was, and will hereafter appear to be, absolutely innocent of any criminal intention whatever. He had indeed committed no other than an error in politics, by tempering justice with mercy, and by refusing to gratify the good-natured disposition of the mob *, with an object for their compassion to work

^{*} Whenever this word occurs in our writings, it intends perfons without virtue, or fense, in all stations; and many of the highest rank are often meant by it.

h

on in the person of poor Jenny, whom, in order to pity, they desired to have been facrificed to ruin and infamy by a Thameful correction in a Bridewell.

So far from complying with this their inclination, by which all hopes of reformation would have been abolifhed, and even the gate flut against her, if her own inclinations should ever hereaster lead her to chuse the road of virtue, Mr. Allworthy rather chose to encourage the girl to return thither by the only possible means; for too true I am assaid it is, that many women have become abandoned, and have sunk to the last degree of vice by being unable to retrieve the first slip. This will be, I am assaid, always the case while they remain among their former acquaine ance; it was therefore wisely done by Mr. Allworthy, to remove Jenny to a place where she might enjoy the pleasure of reputation, after having tasted the ill consequences of losing it.

To this place therefore, wherever it was, we will wish her a good journey, and for the present take leave of her, and of the little foundling her child, having matters of much higher importance to communicate

to the reader.

CHAP. X.

The hospitality of Allworthy; with a short sketch of the characters of two brothers, a Doctor, and a Captain, who were entertained by that gentleman.

NEITHER Mr. Allworthy's house, nor his heart, were shut against any part of mankind, but they were both more particularly open to men of merit.

merit. To fay the truth, this was the only house in the kingdom where you was fure to gain a dinner by deserving it.

Above all others, men of genius and learning fhared the principal place in his favour; and in these he had much discernment: for though he had missed the advantage of a learned education, yet being blest with vast natural abilities, he had so well profited by a vigorous, though late application to letters, and by much conversation with men of eminence in this way, that he was himself a very competent judge in most kinds of literature.

It was no wonder that in an age when this kind of merit is so little in fashion, and so stenderly provided for, persons possessed of it should very eagerly flock to a place where they were sure of being received with great complaisance; indeed where they might enjoy almost the same advantages of a liberal fortune as if they were entitled to it in their own right; for Mr. Allworthy was not one of those generous persons, who are ready most bountifully to bestow meat, drink, and lodging on men of wit and learning, for which they expect no other return but entertainment, instruction, flattery, and subserviency; in a word, that such persons should be enrolled in the number of domestics, without wearing their masters cloaths, or receiving wages.

e

đ

is

1,

of

t.

On the contrary, every person in this house was persect master of his own time; and as he might at his pleasure satisfy all his appeares within the restrictions only of law, virtue and religion; so he might, if his health required, or his inclination prompted him to temperance, or even to abstinence, absent him.

Vol. I, D felf

felf from any meals, or retire from them whenever he was so disposed, without even a solicitation to the contrary: for indeed, such solicitations from superiors always savour very strongly of commands. But all here were free from such impertinence, not only those, whose company is in all other places esteemed a savour from their equality of fortune, but even those whose indigent circumstances make such an eleemofynary abode convenient to them, and who are therefore less wellcome to a great man's table because they stand in need of it.

Among others of this kind was Dr. Blifil, a gentieman who had the misfortune of lofing the advantage of great talents by the oblitinacy of a father, who would breed him to a profession he disliked. In obedience to this obstinacy the doctor had in his youth been obliged to study physic, or rather to say he studied it; for in reality books of this kind were almost the only ones with which he was unacquainted; and unfortunately for him, the doctor was master of almost every other science but that by which he was to get his bread; the consequence of which was, that the doctor at the age of forty had no bread to eat.

o Such a person as this was certain to find a welcome at Mr. Allworthy's table, to whom missortunes were ever a recommendation when they were derived from the folly or villany of others, and not of the unfortunate person himself. Besides this negative merit, the doctor had one positive recommendation. This was a great appearance of religion. Whether his religion was real, or consisted only in appearance, I shall not presume to say, as I am not possessed of any

ó

1

e,

ot

any touchstone, which can distinguish the true from

If this part of his character pleased Mr. Allworthy, it delighted Miss Bridget. She engaged him in many religious controversies; on which occasions she constantly expressed great satisfaction in the doctor's knowledge, and not much less in the compliments which he frequently bestowed on her own. To say the truth, she had read much English divinity, and had puzzled more than one of the neighbouring curates. Indeed her conversation was so pure, her looks so sage, and her whole deportment so grave and solemn, that she seemed to deserve the name of saint equally with her name-sake, or with any other semale in the Roman kalendar.

As fympathies of all kinds are apt to beget love; fo experience teaches us that none have a more direct tendency this way than those of a religious kind between persons of different sexes. The doctor found himself so agreeable to Miss Bridget, that he now began to lament an unfortunate accident which had happened to him about ten years before; namely, his marriage with another woman, who was not only still alive, but what was worse, known to be so by Mr. Allworthy. This was a fatal bar to that happiness which he otherwise saw sufficient probability of obtaining with this young lady; for as to criminal indulgencies, he certainly never thought of them. This was owing either to his religion, as is most probable, or to the purity of his passion, which was fixed on those things, which matrimony only, and not criminal correspondence, could put him in possession of, or could give him any title to al , the hand homeither

D 2

He had not long ruminated on these matters, before it occurred to his memory that he had a brother who was under no such unhappy incapacity. This brother he made no doubt would succeed; for he discerned, as he thought, an inclination to marriage in the lady; and the reader perhaps, when he hears the brother's qualifications, will not blame the considence which he entertained of his success.

This gentleman was about 35 years of age. He was of a middle fize, and what is called well-built. He had a fcar on his forehead, which did not fo much injure his beauty, as it denoted his valour (for he was a half-pay officer). He had good teeth, and fomething affable, when he pleafed, in his fmile; though naturally his countenance, as well as his air and voice had much of roughness in it, yet he could at any time deposite this, and appear all gentleness and good humour. He was not ungenteel, nor entirely void of wit, and in his youth had abounded in sprightliness, which, though he had lately put on a more serious character, he could, when he pleafed, resume.

He had, as well as the doctor, an academic education; for his father had, with the same paternal authority we have mentioned before, decreed him for holy orders; but as the old gentleman died before he was ordained, he chose the church military, and preferred the king's commission to the bishop's.

He had purchased the post of lieutenant of dragoons, and afterwards came to be a captain; but, having quarrelled with his colonel, was by his interest obliged to sell; from which time he had entirely rusticated himself, had betaken himself to studying

t,

the scriptures, and was not a little suspected of an inclination to methodifm.

It feemed therefore not unlikely that fuch a person Should succeed with a lady of so faint-like a disposition, and whose inclinations were no otherwise engaged than to the married flate in general; but why the doctor, who certainly had no great friendship for his brother, should for his fake think of making so ill a return to the hospitality of Allworthy, is a matter not so easy to be accounted for.

Is it that fome natures delight in evil, as others are thought to delight in virtue? Or is there a pleasure in being accessary to a theft when we cannot commit it ourselves? Or lastly, (which experience seems to make probable) have we a fatisfaction in aggrandiz-ing our families, even though we have not the leaft love or respect for them?

Whether any of these motives operated on the doctor we will not determine; but so the fact was, He fent for his brother, and eafily found means to introduce him at Allworthy's as a person who intended only a short visit to himself.

The captain had not been in the house a week, before the doctor had reason to felicitate himself on his discernment. The captain was indeed as great a mafter of the art of love as Ovid was formerly. He had besides received proper hints from his brother, which he failed not to improve to the best advantage.

the icit, the firsty and the mora

CHAP. XI.

Containing many rules, and some examples, concerning falling in love: descriptions of beauty, and other more prudential inducements to matrimony.

I Thath been observed by wise men or women, I forget which, that all persons are doomed to be in love once in their lives. No particular season is, as I remember, assigned for this; but the age at which Miss Bridget was arrived, seems to me as proper a period as any to be fixed on for this purpose: it often indeed happens much earlier; but when it doth not, I have observed, it seldom or never sails about this time. Moreover, we may remark that at this season love is of a more serious and steady nature than what sometimes shews itself in the younger parts of life. The love of girls is uncertain, capricious, and so soolish that we cannot always discover what the young lady would be at; nay, it may almost be doubted, whether she always knows this herself.

Now we are never at a loss to discern this in women about forty; for as such grave, serious and experienced ladies well know their own meaning; so it is always very easy for a man of the least sagacity to discover it with the utmost certainty.

Miss Bridget is an example of all these observations. She had not been many times in the captain's company before she was seiz'd with this passion. Nor did she go pining and moping about the house, like a puny soolish girl, ignorant of her distemper; she felt, she knew, and she enjoyed, the pleasing sensation,

S

.

fensation, of which, as she was certain it was not only innocent but laudable, she was neither assault nor as handed.

And to fay the truth, there is in all points, great difference between the reasonable passion which women at this age conceive towards men, and the idle and childish liking of a girl to a boy, which is often fixed on the outside only, and on things of little value and no duration; as on cherry cheeks, small hily-white hands, sloe-black eyes, slowing locks, downy chins, dapper shapes, nay sometimes on charms more worthless than these, and less the party's own; such are the outward ornaments of the person, for which men are beholden to the taylor, the laceman, the periwignaker, the hatter, and the milliner, and not to name. Such a passion girls may well be as hamed, as they generally are, to own either to themselves or to others.

The love of Mils Bridget was of another kind. The captain owed nothing to any of these fop-makers n his dress, nor was his person much more beholden o nature. Both his dress and person were such as, ad they appeared in an affembly, or a drawing-room, would have been the contempt and ridicule of all the fine ladies there. The former of these was indeed neat, but plain, coarse, ill-fancied, and out of fashion. As for the latter, we have expressly described it above. so far was the Ikin on his cheeks from being cherrycoloured, that you would not difcern what the natural colour of his cheeks was, they being totally overgrown by a black beard, which ascended to his eyes. His shape and limbs were indeed exactly proportioned, but so large, that they denoted the strength rather of D 4 a plougha ploughman than any other. His shoulders were broad, beyond all fize, and the calves of his legs larger than those of a common chairman. In short, his whole person wanted all that elegance and beauty, which is the very reverse of clumsy strength, and which so agreeably sets off most of our sine gentlemen; being partly owing to the high blood of their ancestors, viz. blood made of rich sauces and generous wines, and partly to an early town education.

Though Miss Bridget was a woman of the greatest delicacy of taste; yet such were the charms of the captain's conversation, that she totally overlooked the desects of his person. She imagined, and perhaps very wisely, that she should enjoy more agreeable minutes with the captain than with a much prettier fellow; and forewent the consideration of pleasing her eyes, in order to procure herself much more solid sa-

tisfaction.

-denota n

The captain no fooner perceived the passion of Miss Bridget, in which discovery he was very quick-sighted, that he faithfully returned it. The lady, no more than her lover, was remarkable for beauty. I would attempt to draw her picture; but that is done already by a more able master, Mr. Hogarth himself, to whom the sat many years ago, and hath been lately exhibited by that gentleman in his print of a winter's morning, of which she was no improper emblem, and may be seen walking (for walk she doth in the print) to Covent-Garden Church, with a starved footboy behind carrying her prayer-book.

The captain likewise very wisely preferred the more folid enjoyments he expected with this lady, to the fleeting charms of person. He was one of those wise

ferve

men, who regard beauty in the other fex as a very worthless and superficial qualification; or, to speak more truly, who rather chuse to possess every convenience of life with an ugly woman, than a handsome one without any of those conveniencies. And having a very good appetite, and but little nicety, he fancied she should play his part very well at the matrimonial

banquet, without the fauce of beauty.

To deal plainly with the reader, the captain, ever fince his arrival, at least from the moment his brother had proposed the match to him, long before he had discovered any flattering symptoms in Miss Bridget, had been greatly enamoured; that is to say, of Mr. Allworthy's house and gardens, and of his lands, tenements and hereditaments; of all which the captain was so passenged marriage with them, had he been obliged to have taken the witch of Endor into the bargain.

As Mr. Allworthy therefore had declared to the doctor, that he never intended to take a second wise, as his sister was his nearest relation, and as the doctor had sisted out that his intentions were to make any child of hers his heir, which indeed the law, without his interposition, would have done for him; the doctor and his brother thought it an act of benevolence to give being to a human creature, who would be so plentifully provided with the most essential means of happiness. The whole thoughts therefore of both the brothers were how to engage the affections of this amiable lady.

But fortune, who is a tender parent, and often doth more for her favourite offspring than either they de-

ferve or wish, had been so industrious for the captain, that whilst he was laying schemes to execute his purpose, the lady conceived the same desires with himself, and was on her side contriving how to give the captain proper encouragement, without appearing too forward; for she was a strict observer of all rules of decorum. In this, however, she easily succeeded; for as the captain was always on the look-out, no glance,

gesture, or word escaped him.

The fatisfaction which the captain received from the kind behaviour of Miss Bridget, was not a little abated by his apprehensions of Mr. Allworthy; for, notwithflanding his difinterested professions, the captain imagined he would, when he came to act, follow the example of the rest of the world, and refuse his confent to a match, fo disadvantageous, in coint of interest, to his fifter. From what oracle he received this opinion, I shall leave the reader to determine; but, however he came by it, it strangely perplexed him, how to regulate his conduct fo as at once to convey his affection to the lady, and to conceal it from her brother. He, at length, refolved to take all private opportunities of making his addresses; but in the prefence of Mr. Allworthy to be as referved, and as much upon his guard, as was possible; and this conduct was highly approved by the brother.

He foon found means to make his address, in express terms, to his mistress, from whom he received an answer in the proper form, viz. the answer which was first made some thousands of years ago, and which hath been handed down by tradition from mother to daughter ever since. If I was to translate this into Latin, I should render it by these two words,

Nole

Nolo Episcopari: a phrase likewise of immemorial use on another occasion.

The captain, however he came by his knowledge, perfectly well understood the lady; and very soon after repeared his application, with more warmth and earnestness than before, and was again, according to due form, rejected; but as he had increased in the eagerness of his desires, so the lady, with the same propriety, decreased in the violence of her refusal.

Not to tire the reader by leading him through every scene of this courts hip, (which, though, in the opinion of a certain great author, it is the pleasantest scene of life to the actor, is perhaps, as dull and sire-some as any whatever to the audience) the captain made his advances in form, the citadel was defended in form, and at length, in proper form surrendered at discretion.

During this whole time, which filled the space of near a month, the captain preserved great distance of behaviour to his lady, in the presence of the brother; and the more he succeeded with her in private, the more reserved was he in public. And as for the lady, she had no sooner secured her lover, than she behaved to him before company with the highest degree of indifference; so that Mr. Allworthy must have had the insight of the devil (or perhaps some of his worse qualities) to have entertained the least suspicion of what was going forward.

CHAP. XII.

Containing what the reader may perhaps expect to find in it.

IN all bargains, whether to fight or to marry, or concerning any other fuch business, little previous ceremony is required, to bring the matter to an issue, when both parties are really in earnest. This was the case at present, and in less than a month the captain and his lady were man and wife.

The great concern now was to break the matter to Mr. Allworthy; and this was undertaken by the doctor.

One day then as Allworthy was walking in his garden, the doctor came to him, and, with great gravity of aspect, and all the concern which he could possibly affect in his countenance, faid, 'I am come, Sir, to impart an affair to you of the utmost consequence; but how shall I mention to you, what it almost distracts me to think of! He then launched forth into the most bitter invectives both against men and women; accusing the former of having no attachment but to their interest, and the latter of being fo addicted to vicious inclinations, that they could never be fafely trufted with one of the other fex. ' Could I,' faid he, 'Sir, have fuspected, that a lady of fuch prudence, fuch judgment, fuch learning, flould indulge to indifcreet a passion; or could I ' have imagined, that my brother-why do I call him ' fo? He is no longer a brother of mine.'-

'Indeed but he is,' faid Allworthy, 'und a brother of mine too.'—' Bless me Sir,' faid the Doctor, 'Do

Do you know the fhocking affair?' - 'Look'ee, Mr. Bhfil,' answered the good man, 'It hath been my constant maxim in life, to make the best of all matters which happen. My fifter, though many years younger than I, is at least ould enough to be at the age of discretion. Had he imposed on a child, I should have been more averse to have forgiven him; but a woman, upwards of thirty, must certainly be fupposed to know what will make her most happy. She hath married a gentleman, though perhaps not quite her equal in fortune; and if he hath any perfections in her eye, which can make up that deficiency, I fee no reason why I should object to her choice of her own happiness; which I, no more than herfelf, imagine to confift only in immenfe wealth. I might perhaps, from the many declarations I have made, of complying with almost any proposal, have expected to have been consulted on this occasion; but these matters are of a very delicate nature, and the scruples of modesty, perhaps, are not to be overcome. As to your brother, I have really no anger against him at all. He hath no obligation to me, nor do I think he was under any necessity of asking my consent, since the woman is, as I have faid, fui juris, and of a proper age to be entirely answerable only to herself for her conduct. is in Samounced electric exercises and animal version

The Doctor accused Mr. Allworthy of too great lenity, repeated his accusations against his brother, and declared that he should never more be brought either to see, or to own him for his relation. He then launched forth into a panegyric on Allworthy's goodness; into the highest encomiums on his friend-

fhip

fhip; and concluded by faying, fhe fhould never forgive his brother for having put the place which he

bore in that friendship to a hazard.

Allworthy thus answered: 'Had I conceived any displeasure against your brother, I should never have carried that refentment to the innocent: but, I affure you, I have no fuch displeasure. Your brother appears to me to be a man of fense and honour. I do not dissaprove the taste of my sister; nor will I doubt but that she is equally the object of his inclimations. I have always thought love the only foundation of happiness in a married state; as it can only produce that high and tender friendship which fhould always be the cement of this union; and, in my opinion, all those marriages which are contracted from other motives, are greatly criminal; they are a profanation of a most holy ceremony, and generally end in disquiet and misery; for surely we may call it a profanation, to convert this most facred institution into a wicked facrifice to lust or avarice: and what better can be faid of those matches to which men are induced merely by the confideration of a beautiful person, or a great fortune!

'To deny that beauty is an agreeable object to the eye, and even worthy fome admiration, would be false and foolish. Beautiful is an epithet often used in Scripture, and always mentioned with honour. It was my own fortune to marry a woman whom the world thought handsome, and I can truly say, I liked her the better on that account. But, to make this the sole consideration of marriage, to lust after it so violently as to over-look all imperfections for its sake, or to require it so absolutely as to reject and distain religion,

religion, virtue, and sense, which are qualities, in their nature, of much higher perfection, only because an elegance of person is wanting; this is surely inconsistent, either with a wise man or a good christian. And it is, perhaps, being too charitable to conclude, that such persons mean any thing more by their marriage, than to please their carnal appetites; for the satisfaction of which, we are taught, it was not ordained.

In the next place, with respect to fortune; Worldly prudence, perhaps, exacts some consideration on this head; nor will I absolutely and altogether condemn it. As the world is constituted, the demands of a married state, and the care of posterity, require some little regard to what we call circumstances. Yer this provision is greatly increased, beyond what is really necessary, by folly and vanity, which create abundantly more wants than nature. Equipage for the wife, and large fortunes for the children, are by custom enrolled in the list of necessaries; and, to procure these, every thing truly solid and sweet, and virtuous and religious, are neglected and over-slooked.

And this in many degrees; the last and greatest of which seems scarce distinguishable from madness. I mean where persons of immense fortunes contract themselves to those who are, and must be, disagreeable to them; to fools and knaves, in order to encrease an estate, already larger even than the demands of their pleasures. Surely such persons, if they will not be thought mad, must own, either that they are incapable of tasting the sweets of the tender-

Captain

tendereft friendfhip, or that they facrifice the great-

eft happiness of which they are capable, to the

vain, uncertain and fenfeless laws of vulgar opinion. which owe as well their force, as their foundation

to folly.

seader-

Here Allworthy concluded his fermon, to which Blifil had liftened with the profoundest attention, though it cost him some pains to prevent now and then a small discomposure of his muscles. He now praifed every period of what he had heard, with the warmth of a young divine, who hath the honour to dine with a bishop the same day in which his lord-Thip hath mounted the pulpit.

CHAP. XIII.

Which concludes the first book; with an instance of ingratitude, which, we hope, will appear unnatural.

HE reader, from what hath been faid, may imagine, that the reconciliation (if indeed it could be fo called) was only matter of form; we shall therefore pass it over, and hasten to what must furely

be thought matter of fubstance.

The doctor had acquainted his brother with what had past between Mr. Allworthy and him; and added with a smile: 'I promise you, I paid you off; nay, I absolutely desired the good gentleman not to forgive you: for you know, after he had made a declaration in your favour, I might, with fafety, venture on fuch request with a person of his temper; and I was willing, as well for your fake as for my own, to prevent the least possibility of a suspicion.

n

folation

Captain Blifil took not the least notice of this, at that time; but he afterwards made a very notable ule of it is sail, ben't small and the board has behaltour

One of the maxims which the devil, in a late visit upon earth, left to his disciples, is, when once you are got up, to kick the stool from under you. In plain English, when you have made your fortune by the good offices of a friend, you are advised to discard him as foon as you can.

Whether the captain acted by this maxim, I will not politively determine; fo far we may confidently fay, that his actions may be fairly derived from this diabolical principle; and indeed it is difficult to affigir any other motive to them: for no fooner was he poffelfed of Miss Bridget, and reconciled to Allworthy. than he began to shew a coldness to his brother, which encreased daily; till at length it grew into rudeness, and became very visible to every one.

The doctor remonstrated to him privately concerning this behaviour, but could obtain no other fatisfaction than the following plain declaration: 'If you dislike any thing in my brother's house, Sir, you know you are at liberty to quit it. This strange, cruel, and almost unaccountable ingratitude in the captain, absolutely broke the poor doctor's heart: for ingraritude never fo thoroughly pierces the human breast, as when it proceeds from those in whose behalf we have been guilty of transgressions. Reslections on great and good actions, however they are received or returned by those in whose favour they are performed always administer some comfort to us; but what con-VOL. I.

folation shall we receive under so biting a calamity as the ungrateful behaviour of our friend, when our wounded conscience at the same time slies in our face, and upbraids us with having spotted it in the service of one so worthless?

Mr. Allworthy himself spoke to the captain in his brother's behalf, and desired to know what offence the doctor had committed; when the hard-hearted villain had the baseness to say, that he should never forgive him for the injury which he had endeavoured to do him in his sayour; which, he said, he had pumped out of him, and was such a cruelty, that it ought not to be forgiven.

Allworthy spoke in very high terms upon this declaration, which, he said, became not a human creature. He expressed, indeed, so much resentment against an unforgiving temper, that the captain at last pretended to be convinced by his arguments, and outwardly professed to be reconciled.

As for the bride, fhe was now in her honey-moon, and so passionately fond of her new husband, that he never appeared to her, to be in the wrong; and his displeasure against any person was a sufficient reason for her distike to the same.

The captain, at Mr. Allworthy's instance, was outwardly, as we have said, reconciled to his brother, yet the same rancour remained in his heart; and he found so many opportunities of giving him private hints of this, that the house at last grew insupportable to the poor doctor; and he chose rather to submit to

any inconveniencies which he might encounter in the world, than longer to bear these cruel and ungrateful insults, from a brother for whom he had done so much.

He once intended to acquaint Allworthy with the whole; but he could not bring himself to submit to the confession, by which he must take to his share so great a portion of guilt. Besides, by how much the worse man he represented his brother to be, so much the greater would his own offence appear to Allworthy, and so much the greater, he had reason to imagine, would be his resentment.

He feigned, therefore, some excuse of business for his departure, and promised to return soon again; and took leave of his brother with so well-dissembled content, that, as the captain played his part to the same persection, Allworthy remained well satisfied with the truth of the reconciliation.

The doctor went directly to London, where he died foon after of a broken heart; a distemper which kills many more than is generally imagined, and would have a fair title to a place in the bill of mortality, did it not differ in one instance from all other diseases, viz. That no physician can cure it.

Now, upon the most diligent enquiry into the former lives of these two brothers, I find, besides the cursed and hellish maxim of policy above-mentioned, another reason for the captain's conduct; the captain, besides what we have before said of him, was a man of great bride and sierceness, and had always treated his brother, who was of a different complexion, and

E 2

greatly

greatly deficient in both these qualities, with the utmost air of superiority. The doctor, however, had much the larger share of learning, and was by many reputed to have the better understanding. This the captain knew, and could not bear; for though envy is, at best, a very malignant passion, yet is its bitterness greatly heightened, by mixing with contempt towards the same object; and very much asraid I am, that whenever an obligation is joined to these two, indignation, and not gratitude, will be the product of all three.

one, mould be a concerned inscribed as a salakour fanc

The felt ed. the close, their excels of haliness for his departure, and leveralist to return then equin; and to bullcars of his tendence is to be table infernalist

Concert, that is the control of the fame from the control of the fame from the control of the co

The doctor were directly to I probb, where he dod, to remove the dod, to remove which dod, to remove which which make more used, and wright have a few a few and all reportality, that it not take he will not take the control of the remove the control of the control of the remove the

Now, as a mean of whice the min to the man into the man march et al. 16.6 Les the march et al. 2 Les the march et

who or the real of malou.

in sand the home bound if yis

ing a character of a different Loughering, and

Model

HISTORY

more amountained or new authorities

OF A sense of the orange of th

FOUNDLING.

BOOK II.

Containing scenes of matrimonial felicity in different degrees of life; and various other transactions during the first two years after the marriage between Captain Blifil and Miss Bridget Allworthy.

CHAP. I. Second of ?

Shewing what kind of a history this is; what it is like, and what it is not like.

HOUGH we have properly enough entitled this our work, a history, and not a life; nor an apology for a life, as is more in fashion; yet we intend in it rather to pursue the method of those writers, who profess to disclose the revolutions of countries, than to imitate the painful and voluminous E 3 historian.

hillorian,

historian, who, to preserve the regularity of his series, thinks himself obliged to fill up as much paper with the detail of months and years in which nothing remarkable happened, as he employs upon those notable æras when the greatest scenes have been transacted

on the human stage.

Such histories as these do, in reality, very much refemble a news-paper, which confifts of just the same number of words, whether there be any news in it or They may, likewise, be compared to a stagecoach, which performs conftantly the fame courfe, empty as well as full. The writer, indeed, feems to think himself obliged to keep even pace with time, whose amanuensis he is; and, like his master, travels as flowly through centuries of monkish dulness, when the world feems to have been afleep, as through that bright and bufy age fo nobly diffinguished by the excellent Latin poet:

- Ad confligendum venientibus undique pænis,
 - · Omnia cum belli trepido concussa tumultu
 - · Horrida contremuere sub altis ætheris auris:
 - In dubioque fuit sub utrorum regna cadendum
- Omnibus humanis effet, terraque marique.

Of which we wish we could give our reader a more adequate translation than that by Mr. Creech:

- When dreadful Carthage frighted Rome with arms,
- And all the world was shook with fierce alarms;
- Whilst undecided yet, which part should fall,
- Which nation rife the glorious Lord of all.

Now it is our purpose in the ensuing pages, to purfue a contrary method. When any extraordinary scene presents itself, (as we trust will often be the case) we Thall fpare no pains nor paper to open it at large to our reader; but if whole years should pass without producing any thing worthy his notice, we shall not be afraid of a chasm in our history; but shall hasten on to matters of confequence, and leave fuch periods

of time totally unobserved want on how after aight

These are indeed to be considered as blanks in the grand lottery of time. We therefore who are the regifters of that lottery, I hall imitate those fagacious perfons who deal in that which is drawn at Guildhall and who never trouble the publick with the many blanks they dispose of; but when a great prize happens to be drawn, the news-papers are prefently filled with it, and the world is fure to be informed at whose office it was fold: indeed, commonly two or three different offices lay claim to the honour of having disposed of it; by which I suppose, the adventurers are given to understand, that certain brokers are in the fecrets of fortune, and indeed of her cabinet-council.

My reader then is not to be surprized, if, in the course of this work, he shall find some chapters very fhort, and others altogether as long; some that contain only the time of a fingle day; and others that comprise years; in a word, if my history sometimes feems to stand still, and sometimes to fly. For all which I shall not look on myself as accountable to any court of critical jurisdiction whatever: for as I am, in reality, the founder of a new province of writing, fo I am at liberty to make what laws I please therein. And SIV thele

E 4

these laws, my readers, whom I consider as my subjects, are bound to believe in, and to obey; with which that they may readily and chearfully comply, I do hereby affure them, that I shall principally regard their eafe and advantage in all fuch inflitutions: for I do not, like a jure divino tyrant, imagine that they are my flaves, or my commodity. I am, indeed, fet over them for their own good only, and was created for their use, and not they for mine. Nor do I doubt, while I make their interest the great rule of my writings, they will unanimoufly concur in supporting my dignity, and in rendering me all the honour I shall deferve or defire, b at their seas at toob once and

ig scarps G.HrA.P. : H. Jodilla yard admid

Religious cautions against Shewing too much favour to bastards; and a great discovery made by Mrs. Deborah Wilkins.

IGHT months after the celebration of the nup-Litials between captain Blifil and Mifs Bridget Allworthy, a young lady of great beauty, merit, and fortune, was Miss Bridget, by reason of a fright, delivered of a fine boy. The child was indeed, to all appearance, perfect: but the midwife discovered, it

was born a month before its full time.

Though the birth of an heir by his beloved fifter was a circumstance of great joy to Mr. Allworthy, yet it did not alienate his affections from the little foundling, to whom he had been god-father, had giyen his own name of Thomas, and whom he had his therto feldom failed of visiting, at least once a day, in He told his fifter, if the pleafed, the new born infant should be bred up together with little Tommy, to which she consented, though with some little reluctance: for she had truly a great complacence for her brother; and hence she had always behaved towards the foundling with rather more kindness than ladies of rigid virtue can sometimes bring themselves to shew to these children, who, however innocent, may be truly called the living monuments of incontinence.

The captain could not so easily bring himself to bear what he condemned as a fault in Mr. Allworthy. He gave him frequent hints, that to adopt the fruits of fin, was to give countenance to it. He quoted feveral texts (for he was well read in scripture) such as: He vifits the fins of the fathers upon the children; and, the fathers have eaten four grapes, and the children's teeth are fet on edge, &c. Whence he argued the legality of punishing the crime of the parent on the baftard. He faid: 'Thoug the law did not positively allow the destroying such base-born children, yet it ' held them to be the children of no-body: that the ' church confidered them as the children of no-body: and that, at the best, they ought to be brought up to the lowest and vilest offices of the commonwealth. Salound a description of the barrier field

Mr. Allworthy answered to all this, and much more, which the captain had urged on this subject:

That however guilty the parents might be, the children were certainly innocent; that as to the texts he had quoted, the former of them was a particular denunciation against the Jews, for the sin of idolatry, of relinquishing and hating their heavenly King: and the latter was parabolically spoken, and E s

rather intended to denote the certain and necessary confequences of fin, than any express judgment against it. But to represent the Almighty as aven-

ging the fins of the guilty on the innocent, was indecent, if not blasphemous, as it was to represent

him acting against the first principles of natural jufice, and against the original notions of right and

wrong, which he himself had implanted in our minds; by which we were to judge not only in all matters

which were not revealed, but even of the truth of

revelation itself. He said, he knew many held the

fame principles with the captain on this head; but he was himself firmly convinced to the contrary,

and would provide in the same manner for this poor

infant, as if a legitimate child had had the fortune

to have been found in the fame place.'

While the captain was taking all opportunities to press these and such like arguments, to remove the little foundling from Mr. Allworthy's, of whose fondness for him he began to be jealous, , Mrs. Deborah had made a discovery, which, in its event, threatened at least to prove more fatal to poor Tommy, than all and that, at the bell

the reasonings of the captain.

Whether the infatiable cariofity of this good woman had carried her on to that business, or whether The did it to confirm herfelf in the good graces of Mrs. Blifil, who, notwithstanding her outward behaviour to the foundling, frequently abused the infant in private, and her brother too for his fondness to it, I will not determine, but she had now, as she conceived, fully detected the father of the foundling.

Now, as this was a discovery of great consequence, it may be necessary to trace it from the fountain-head. rather

Chap. 3.

We shall therefore very minutely lay open those previous matters by which it was produced; and for that purpose, we shall be obliged to reveal all the secrets of a little family, with which my reader it at present entirely unacquainted; and of which the economy was so rare and extraordinary, that I fear it will shock the utmost credulity of many married persons.

CHAP. III.

The description of a domestic government sounded upon rules directly contrary to those of Aristotle.

MY reader may please to remember he hath been informed, that Jenny Jones had lived some years with a certain schoolmaster, who had, at her earnest desire, instructed her in Latin, in which, to do justice to her genius, she had so improved herself, that the was become a better scholar than her master.

Indeed, though this poor man had undertaken a profession to which learning must be allowed necessary, this was the least of his commendations. He was one of the best-natured sellows in the world, and was, at the same time, master of so much pleasantry and humour, that he was reputed the wit of the country; and all the neighbouring gentlemen were so desirous of his company, that, as denying was not his talent, he spent much time at their houses, which he might, with more emolument, have spent in his school.

It may be imagined, that a gentleman so qualified and so disposed, was in no danger of becoming formidable to the learned seminaries of Eton or Westminster. To speak plainly, his scholars were divided

into

into two classes; in the upper of which was a young gentleman, the son of a neighbouring 'squire, who at the age of seventeen was just entered into his Syntaxis; and in the lower was a second son of the same gentleman, who, together with seven parish-boys,

was learning to read and write.

The stipend arising hence would hardly have indulged the schoolmaster in the luxuries of life, had he not added to this office those of clerk and barber, and had not Mr. Allworthy added to the whole an annuity of ten pound, which the poor man received every Christmas, and with which he was enabled to chear his heart during that facred festival.

Among his other treasures, the pedagogue had a wife, whom he had married out of Mr. Allworthy's kitchen for her fortune, viz. twenty pound, which she

had there amassed.

This woman was not very amiable in her person. Whether she sat to my friend Hogarth, or no, I will not determine; but she exactly resembled the young woman who is pouring out her mistresses's tea in the third picture of the Harlot's Progress. She was, besides, a profest follower of that noble sect founded by Xantippe of old; by means of which she became more formidable in the school than her husband; for, to confess the truth, he was never master there, or any where else in her presence.

Though her countenance did not denote much natural fweetness of temper, yet this was, perhaps, somewhat sourced by a circumstance which generally poisons matrimonial felicity: for children are rightly called the pledges of love; and her husband, though they had been married nine years, had given her no such

fuch pledges; a default for which he had no excuse, either from age or health, being not yet thirty years old, and, what they call, a jolly, brisk, young man.

Hence arose another evil, which produced no little uneasiness to the poor pedagogue, of whom she maintained so constant a jealousy, that he durst hardly speak to one woman in the parish; for the least degree of civility, or even correspondence, with any female, was sure to bring his wife upon her back and his own.

In order to guard herself against matrimonial injuries in her own house, as she kept one maid-servant, she always took care to chuse her out of that order of semales, whose faces are taken as a kind of security for their virtue; of which number Jenny Jones, as the reader hath been informed, was one.

As the face of this young woman might be called pretty good fecurity of the before-mentioned kind, and as her behaviour had been always extremely modest; which is the certain consequence of understanding in women; she had passed above four years at Mr. Partridge's, (for that was the schoolmaster's name) without creating the least suspicion in her mistress. Nay, she had been treated with uncommon kindness, and her mistress had permitted Mr. Partridge to give her those instructions, which have been before commemorated.

But it is with jealoufy, as with the gout. When fuch differences are in the blood, there is never any fecurity against their breaking out; and that often on the slightest occasions, and when least suspected.

Thus it happened to Mrs. Partridge, who had fubmitted four years to her hulband's teaching this young woman, and had fuffered her often to neglect her work, in order to purfue her learning. For passing by one day, as the girl was reading, and her master leaning over her, the girl, I know not for what reason, suddenly started up from her chair: and this was the first time that suspicion ever entered into the head

of her mistress.

This did not, however, at that time, discover itfelf, but lay lurking in her mind, like a concealed enemy, who waits for a reinforcement of additional strength, before he openly declares himself, and proceeds upon hostile operations: and such additional strength soon arrived to corroborate her suspicion; for not long after, the hufband and wife being at dinner, the master said to his maid: Da mihi aliquid potum: upon which the poor girl finiled, perhaps at the badness of the Latin, and when her mistress cast her eyes on her, blufhed, possibly with the consciousness of having laughed at her mafter. Mrs. Partridge, upon this immediately fell into a fury, and discharged the trencher, on which the was eating, at the head of poor Jenny, crying out: 'You impudent whore, do you play tricks with my hufband before my face?' and at the same instant, rose from her chair, with a knife in her hand, with which, most probably, she would have executed very tragical vengeance, had not the girl taken the advantage of being nearer the door than her mistress, and avoided her fury by running away; for, as to the poor hulband, whether furprize had rendered him motionless, or fear (which is full as probable) had restrained him from venturing at any

any opposition, he sat staring and trembling in his chair; nor did he once offer to move or speak, till his wife, returning from the pursuit of Jenny, made some defensive measures necessary for his own preservation, and he likewise was obliged to retreat, after the example of the maid.

This good woman was, no more than Othello, of

a disposition,

- To make a life of jealoufy,

And follow still the changes of the moon

' With fresh suspicions'-

With her, as well as him,

- To be once in doubt,

Was once to be refolv'd'-

fhe, therefore ordered Jenny immediately to pack up her awls, and be gone; for that fhe was determined fhe should not fleep that night within her walls.

Mr. Partridge had profited too much by experience, to interpole in a matter of this nature. He therefore had recourse to his usual receipt of patience; for, though he was not a great adept in Latin, he remembered, and well understood, the advice contained in these words:

- Leve fit, quod bene fertur onus.

In English: 'A burden becomes lightest, when it is well borne.'

Which he had always in his mouth; and of which, to fay the truth, he had often occasion to experience the truth.

Jenny

Jenny offered to make protestations of her innocence; but the tempest was too strong for her to be heard. She then betook herself to the business of packing, for which a small quantity of brown-paper sufficed; and, having received her small pittance of wages, she returned home.

The schoolmaster and his consort pass'd their time unpleasantly enough that evening; but something or other happened before the next morning, which a little abated the fury of Mrs. Partridge; and fhe at length admitted her hufband to make his excuses. To which fhe gave the readier belief, as he had, instead of desiring her to recal Jenny, professed a satisfaction in her being difmiffed, faying, fhe was grown of little use as a servant, spending all her time in reading, and was become, moreover, very pert and obstinate: for, indeed, the and her master had lately had frequent disputes in literature; in which, as hath been faid, fhe was become greatly his superior. This, however, he would by no means allow; and as he called her perfifting in the right, obstinacy, he began to hate her with no small inveteracy.

CHAP. IV.

Containing one of the most bloody battles, or rather duels, that were ever recorded in domestic history.

FOR the reasons mentioned in the preceding chapter, and from some other matrimonial concessions, well known to most husbands; and which, like the secrets of free-masonry, should be divulged to none who are not members of that honourable fraternity.

Mrs.

f

Mrs. Partridge was pretty well fatisfied, that fhe had condemned her huf band without cause, and endeavoured, by acts of kindness, to make him amends for her false suspicion. Her passions were, indeed, equally violent, which ever way they inclined; for, as she could be extremely angry, so could she be al-

together as fond.

But though these passions ordinarily succeed each other, and scarce twenty-sour hours ever passed in which the pedagogue was not, in some degree, the object of both; yet, on extraordinary occasions, when the passion of anger had raged very high, the remission was usually longer, and so was the case at present; for she continued longer in a state of assability, after this sit of jealousy was ended, than her husband had ever known before; and had it not been for some little exercises, which all the followers of Xantippe are obliged to perform daily, Mr. Partridge would have enjoyed a perfect serenity of several months.

Perfect calms at sea are always suspected by the experienced mariner to be the fore-runners of a storm: and I know some persons, who, without being generally the devotees of superstition, are apt to apprehend, that great and unusual peace or tranquillity will be attended with its opposite. For which reason the ancients used, on such occasions, to facrifice to the goddess Nemess, a deity who was thought by them to look with an invidious eye on human felicity, and to have a peculiar delight in overturning it.

As we are very far from believing in any fuch heathen goddes, or from encouraging any superstition, so we wish Mr. John Fr——, or some other such Vol. I. F

philosopher, would bestir himself a little, in order to find out the real cause of this sudden transition, from good to bad fortune, which hath been so often remarked, and of which we shall proceed to give an instance; for it is our province to relate sacts, and we shall leave causes to persons of much higher genius.

Mankind have always taken great delight in knowing and descanting on the actions of others. Hence there have been, in all ages and nations, certain places set apart for public rendezvous, where the curious might meet, and satisfy their mutual curiosity. Among these, the barbers shops have justly borne the pre-eminence. Among the Greeks, barbers news was a proverbial expession; and Horace, in one of his epistles, makes honourable mention of the Roman barbers in the same light.

Those of England are known to be no wise inferior to their Greek or Roman predecessors. You there see foreign affairs discussed in a manner little inferior to that with which they are handled in the cosse-houses; and domestic occurrences are much more largely and freely treated in the former, than in the latter. But this serves only for the men. Now, whereas the semales of this country, especially those of the lower order, do associate themselves much more than those of other nations, our polity would be highly describent, if they had not some place set apart likewise for the indulgence of their curiosity, seeing they are in this no way inferior to the other half of the species.

In enjoying, therefore, such place of rendezvous, the British fair ought to esteem themselves more happy than any of their foreign sisters; as I do not remember

member either to have read in history, or to have feen in my travels, any thing of the like kind.

This place then is no other than the chandler's fhop; the known feat of all the news; or, as it is vulgarly

called, goffiping, in every parifh in England.

Mrs. Partridge being one day at this affembly of females, was asked by one of her neighbours, if she had heard no news lately of Jenny Jones? To which she answered in the negative. Upon this, the other replied with a finile: That the parish was very much obliged to her for having turned Jenny away as she did.

Mrs. Partridge, whose jealousy, as the reader well knows, was long since cured, and who had no other quarrel to her maid, answered boldly, she did not know any obligation the parish had to her on that account; for she believed Jenny had scarce less her equal behind her.

'No, truly, faid the goffip, I hope not, though I fancy we have fluts enow too. Then you have not heard, it feems, that fhe hath been brought to bed of two baftards; but as they are not born here, my hufband, and the other overfeer, fays, we fhat

' not be obliged to keep them.'

'Two bastards!' answered Mrs. Partridge hastily, 'you surprize me. I don't know whether we must keep them; but I am sure they must have been beginned to be gotten here; for the wench hath not been nine 'months gone away.'

Nothing can be fo quick and fudden as the operations of the mind, especially when hope, or fear, or jealousy, to which the two others are but journeymen,

F 2

fer it to work. It occurred inflantly to her, that Jenny had scarce been ever out of her own house, while she lived with her. The leaning over the chair, the sudden starting up, the Latin, the smile, and many other things rushed upon her all at once. The satisfaction her husband expressed in the departure of Jenny, appeared now to be only dissembled; again, in the same instant to be real; but yet, (to confirm her jealousy,) proceeding from satiety, and a hundred other bad causes. In a word, she was convinced of her husband's guilt, and immediately left the assembly in consusion.

As fair Grimalkin, who, though the youngest of the feline family, degenerates not in serocity from the elder branches of her house, and though inserior in strength, is equal in sierceness to the nobler Tiger himself, when a little mouse, whom it hath long tormented in sport, escapes from her clutches, for a while frets, scolds, growls, swears; but if the trunk, or box, behind which the mouse lay hid, be again removed, she slike lightning on her prey, and, with envenomed wrath, bites, scratches, mumbles, and tears the little animal.

Not with less fury did Mrs. Partridge fly on the poor pedagogue. Her tongue, teeth, and hands, fall all upon him at once. His wig was in an instant torn from his head, his shirt from his back, and from his face descended five streams of blood, denoting the number of claws with which nature had unhappily armed the enemy.

Mr. Partridge acted for some time on the defensive only; indeed he attempted only to guard his face with his

ne 9 A

his hands; but as he found that his antagonist abated nothing of her rage, he thought he might, at least, endeavour to disarm her, or rather to confine her arms; in doing which, her cap fell off in the struggle, and her hair being too short to reach her shoulders, erected itself on her head; her stays likewise, which were laced through one single hole at the bottom, burst open; and her breasts, which were much more redundant than her hair, hung down below her middle; her sace was likewise marked with the blood of her husband; her teeth gnashed with rage; and fire, such as sparkles from a smith's forge, darted from her eyes. So that, altogether, this Amazonian heroine might have been an object of terror to a much bolder man than Mr. Partridge.

He had, at length, the good fortune, by getting possession of her arms, to render those weapons, which she wore at the ends of her singers, useless; which she no sooner perceived, than the softness of her sex prevailed over her rage, and she presently dissolved in tears, which soon after concluded in a fit.

That finall share of sense which Mr. Partridge had hitherto preserved through this scene of sury, of the cause of which he was hitherto ignorant, now utterly abandoned him. He ran instantly into the street, hallooing out, that his wife was in the agonies of death, and beseeching the neighbours to fly with the utmost haste to her assistance. Several good women obeyed his summons, who entering his house, and applying the usual remedies on such occasions, Mrs. Partridge was, at length, to the great joy of her husband, brought to herself.

As

AS

As foon as the had a little recollected her spirits, and somewhat composed herself with a cordial, she began to inform the company of the manifold injuries The had received from her hufband; who, fhe faid, was not contented to injure her in her bed; but, upon her upbraiding him with it, had treated her in the cruellest manner imaginable; had torn her cap and hair from her head, and her stays from her body, giving her, at the same time, several blows, the marks of which fhe fhould carry to the grave.

The poor man, who bore on his face many and more visible marks of the indignation of his wife, flood in filent aftonifhment at this accufation; which the reader will, I believe, bear witness for him, had greatly exceeded the truth; for indeed he had not ftruck her once; and this filence being interpreted to be a confession of the charge, by the whole court, they all began at once, una voce, to rebuke and revile him, repeating often, that none but a coward ever ftruk a woman.

Mr. Partridge bore all this patiently; but when his wife appealed to the blood on her face, as an evidence of his barbarity, he could not help laying claim to his own blood, for fo it really was; as he thought it very unnatural, that this fhould rife up (as we are taught that of a murdered person often doth) in vengeance against him.

To this the women made no other answer, than that it was pity it had not come from his heart, instead of his face; all declaring, that if their husbands fhould lift their hands against them, they would have

their hearts-blood out of their bodies.

After much admonition for what was past, and much good advice to Mr. Partridge for his future behaviour, the company at length departed, and lest the husband and wife to a personal conference together, in which Mr. Partridge soon learned the cause of all his sufferings.

CHAP. V.

the contract property

Containing much matter to exercise the judgment and reflection of the reader.

Believe it is a true observation, that few secrets are divulged to one person only; but certainly, it would be next to a miracle, that a fact of this kind should be known to a whole parish, and not transpire any farther.

And, indeed, a very few days had past, before the country, to use a common phrase, rung of the schoolmaster of Little-Baddington; who was said to have beaten his wife in the most cruel manner. Nay, in some places, it was reported he had murdered her; in others, that he had broke her arms: in others, her legs; in short, there was scarce an injury which can be done to a human creature, but what Mrs. Partridge was somewhere or other affirmed to have received from her husband.

The cause of this quarrel was likewise variously reported; for, as some people said that Mrs. Partridge had caught her husband in bed with his maid, so many other reasons, of a very different kind, went abroad. Nay, some transferred the guilt to the wise, and the jealously to the husband.

F 4

Mrs.

Mrs. Wilkins had long ago heard of this quarrel; but, as a different cause from the true one had reached her ears, she thought proper to conceal it; and the rather, perhaps, as the blame was univerfally laid on Mr. Partridge; and his wife, when she was servant to Mr. Allworthy, had in something of fended Mrs. Wilkins, who was not of a very forgiv-

ing temper.

But Mrs. Wilkins, whose eyes could see objects at a distance, and who could very well look forward a few years into futurity, had perceived a strong likelihood of Captain Blifil's being hereafter her mafter; and, as fhe plainly difcerned, that the captain bore no great good-will to the little foundling, The fancied it would be rendering him an agreeable fervice, if The could make any discoveries, that might lessen the affection which Mr. Allworthy feemed to have contracted for the child, and which gave visible uneasiness to the captain; who could not entirely conceal it even before Mr. Allworthy himself; though his wife, who acted her part much better in public, frequently recommended to him her own example, of conniving at the folly of her brother, which, fhe faid, fhe at least as well perceived, and as much resented as any other possibly could.

Mrs. Wilkins having therefore, by accident, gotten a true fcent of the above ftory, though long after it had happened, failed not to fatisfy herself thoroughly of all the particulars; and then acquainted the captain, that she had at last discovered the true father of the little bastard, which she was forry, she said, to see her master lose his reputation in the coun-

try, by taking so much notice of.

The

The captain chid her for the conclusion of her speech, as an improper assurance in judging of her master's actions: for if his honour, or his understanding, would have suffered the captain to make an alliance with Mrs. Wilkins, his pride would by no means have admitted it. And, to say the truth, there is no conduct less politic, than to enter into any confederacy with your friend's servants, against their master. For, by these means, you afterwards become the slave of these very servants; by whom you are constantly liable to be betrayed. And this consideration, perhaps, it was which prevented captain Blisil from being more explicit with Mrs. Wilkins; or from encouraging the abuse which she had bestowed on All-worthy.

But though he declared no fatisfaction to Mrs. Wilkins at this discovery, he enjoyed not a little from it in his own mind, and resolved to make the best use

of it he was able.

He kept this matter a long time concealed within his own breaft, in hopes that Mr. Allworthy might hear it from fome other person; but Mrs. Wilkins, whether she resented the captain's behaviour, or whether his cunning was beyond her, and she feared the discovery might displease him, never afterwards open-

ed her lips about the matter.

I have thought it somewhat strange, upon reflection, that the house-keeper never acquainted Mrs. Bliss with this news, as women are more inclined to communicate all pieces of intelligence to their own sex, than to ours. The only way, as it appears to me, of solving this difficulty, is, by imputing it to that distance which was now grown between the lady and

F 5

the house-keeper: whether this arose from a jealoufy in Mrs. Blifil, that Wilkins shewed too great a respect to the foundling; for while she was endeavouring to ruin the little infant, in order to ingratiate herself with the captain, she was every day more and more commending it before Allworthy, as his fondness for it every day increased. This, notwithstanding all the care fhe took at other times to express the direct contrary to Mrs. Blifil, perhaps offended that delicate lady, who certainly now hated Mrs. Wilkins; and though fhe did not, or possibly could not, absolutely remove her from her place, the found, however, the means of making her life very uneasy. This Mrs. Wilkins, at length, fo refented, that The very openly fhewed all manner of respect and fondness to little Tommy, in opposition to Mrs. Blifil.

The captain, therefore, finding the story in danger of perifhing, at last took an opportunity to reveal it himself.

He was one day engaged with Mr. Allworthy in a discourse on charity: in which the captain, with great learning, proved to Mr. Allworthy, that the word charity in scripture, no where means beneficence or generosity.

'The christian religion, he said, was instituted for much nobler purposes, than to enforce a lesson which many heathen philosophers had taught us long before, and which, though it might perhaps

be called a moral virtue, favoured but little of that

fublime christian-like disposition, that vast elevation of thought, in purity approaching to angelic per-

fection, to be attained, expressed, and felt only by

grace. Those (he said) came nearer to the scripture meaning, who understood by it candour, or the forming of a benevolent opinion of our brethren, and passing a savourable judgment on their actions; a virtue much higher, and more extensive in its nature, than a pitiful distribution of alms, which, though we would never so much prejudice, or even ruin our samilies, could never reach many; whereas charity, in the other and truer sense, might be extended to all mankind.

He said: 'Considering who the disciples were, it would be absurd to conceive the doctrine of genetrosity, or giving alms, to have been preached to them. And, as we could not well imagine this doctrine should be preached by its divine Author to men who could not practise it, much less shall we think it understood so by those who can practise it,

and do not.

'But though,' continued he, 'there is, I am afraid, little merit in these benefactions; there would, I must consess, be much pleasure in them to a good mind, if it was not abated by one consideration. I mean, that we are liable to be imposed upon, and to confer our choicest savours often on the undeserving, as you must own was your case in your bounty to that worthless fellow Partridge, for two or three such examples must greatly lessen the inward satisfaction, which a good man would otherwise find in generosity; may, may even make him timorous in bestowing, less he should be guilty of supporting vice, and encouraging the wicked; a crime of a very black dye, and for which it will by no means be a sufficient excuse, that we have

· fluities;

1.77

'not actually intended fuch an encouragement; unless we have used the utmost caution in chusing the

objects of our beneficence. A confideration which, I make no doubt, hath greatly checked the libera-

! lity of many a worthy and pious man. man.

Mr. Allworthy answered: 'He could not dispute with the captain in the Greek language, and there-

fore could fay nothing as to the true fense of the word which is translated charity; but that he had

' always thought it was interpreted to confift in action, and that giving alms conflituted at least one

branch of that virtue.

'As to the meritorious part, he faid, he readily agreed with the captain; for where could be the merit of barely discharging a duty; which he said, let the word charity have what construction it would, it sufficiently appeared to be from the whole tenor of the New Testament? And as he thought it an indispensable duty, enjoined both by the christian law, and by the law of nature itself; so was it withal so pleasant, that if any duty could be said to be its own reward, or to pay us while we are discharging it, it was this.

'To confess the truth,' said he, 'there is one degree of generosity, (of charity I would have called 'it) which seems to have some shew of merit, and that is, where from a principle of benevolence and 'christian love, we bestow on another what we really want ourselves; where, in order to lessen the distresses of another, we condescend to share some part of them, by giving what even our own necessities cannot well spare. This is, I think, meritorious; but to relieve our brethren only with our super-

fluities; to be charitable (I must use the word) rather at the expence of our coffers than ourselves; to save several families from misery rather than hang up an extraordinary picture in our houses, or gratify any other idle, ridiculous vanity, this seems to be only being human creatures. Nay, I will venture to go farther, it is being in some degree epicures: for what could the greatest epicure wish rather than to eat with many mouths instead of one; which I think may be predicated of any one who knows that the bread of many is owing to his own

largeffes? At he will some specify on

' As to the apprehension of bestowing bounty on fuch as may hereafter prove unworthy objects, because many have proved such; surely it can never deter a good man from generofity: I do not think a few or many examples of ingratitude can justify a man's hardening his heart against the distresses of ' his fellow-creatures: nor do I believe it can ever have fuch effect on a truly benevolent mind. Nothing less than a persuasion of universal depravity can lock up the charity of a good man; and this persuasion must lead him, I think, either into atheism, or enthusiasm; but surely it is unfair to argue such universal depravity from a few vicious individuals; nor was this, I believe, ever done by a man, who upon fearching his own mind found one certain exception to the general rule.' He then concluded by asking: 'who that Partridge was, whom he had called a worthless fellow?

'I mean, faid the captain, Partridge the barber, the schoolmaster, what do you call him? Partridge, the father of the little child which you found in your bed.'

Mr. Allworthy exprest great surprise at this account, and the captain as great at his ignorance of it: for he said he had known it above a month, and at length recollected with much difficulty that he was told it by Mrs. Wilkins.

Upon this, Wilkins was immediately fummoned, who having confirmed what the captain had faid, was by Mr. Allworthy, by and with the captain's advice, dispatched to Little Baddington, to inform herself of the truth of the fact: for the captain express great dislike at all hasty proceedings in criminal matters, and said he would by no means have Mr. Allworthy take any resolution either to the prejudice of the child or its father, before he was satisfied that the latter was guilty: for though he had privately satisfied himself of this from one of Partridge's neighbours, yet he was too generous to give any such evidence to Mr. Allworthy.

CHAP. VI.

The trial of Partridge, the schoolmaster, for incontinency; the evidence of his wife; a short reflection on the wisdom of our law; with other grave matters, which those will like best who understand them most.

I may be wondered that a flory fo well known, and which had furnished so much matter of conversation, should never have been mentioned to Mr. Allworthy himself, who was perhaps the only person in that country who had never heard of it.

To account in some measure for this to the reader,

I think proper to inform him that there was no one in
the

the kingdom less interested in opposing that doctrine concerning the meaning of the word charity, which hath been seen in the preceding chapter, than our good man. Indeed, he was equally intitled to this virtue in either sense; for as no man was ever more sensible of the wants, or more ready to relieve the distresses of others, so none could be more tender of their characters, or slower to believe any thing to

their disadvantage.

Scandal, therefore, never found any access to his table; for as it hath been long since observed, that you may know a man by his companions; so I will venture to say, that by attending to the conversation at a great man's table, you may satisfy yourself of his religion, his politics, his taste, and indeed of his entire disposition: for though a few odd fellows will utter their own sentiments in all places, yet much the greater part of mankind have enough of the courtier to accommodate their conversation to the taste and inclination of their superiors.

But to return to Mrs. Wilkins, who having executed her commission with great dispatch, though at fifteen miles distance, brought back such a confirmation of the schoolmaster's guilt, that Mr. Allworthy determined to send for the criminal, and examine him viva voce. Mr. Partridge, therefore, was summoned to attend, in order to his defence (if he

could make any) against this accusation.

At the time appointed, before Mr. Allworthy himfelf, at Paradife-hall, came as well the faid Partridge, with Anne his wife, as Mrs. Wilkins his accufer.

And now Mr. Allworthy being feated in the chair of justice, Mr. Partridge was brought before him.

Having

Having heard his accusation from the mouth of Mrs. Wilkins, he pleaded, not guilty, making many

vehement protestations of his innocence.

Mrs. Partridge was then examined, who, after a modest apology for being obliged to speak the truth against her husband, related all the circumstances with which the reader hath already been acquainted; and at last concluded with her husband's confession

of his guilt.

Whether she had forgiven him or no, I will not venture to determine: but it is certain, she was an unwilling witness in this cause; and it is probable, from certain other reasons, would never have been brought to depose as she did, had not Mrs. Wilkins, with great art, sished all out of her, at her own house, and had she not indeed made promises in Mr. Allworthy's name, that the punishment of her husband should not be such as might any ways affect his family.

Partridge still persisted in afferting his innocence, though he admitted he had made the above-mentioned confession; which he however endeavoured to account for, by protesting that he was forced into it by the continued importunity she used, who vowed, that as she was sure of his guilt, she would never leave tormenting him till he had owned it, and faithfully promised, that in such case, she would never mention it to him more. Hence, he said, he had been induced falsely to confess himself guilty, though he was innocent; and that he believed he should have confest a murder from the same motive.

Mrs. Partridge could not bear this imputation with patience; and having no other remedy, in the prefent place,

place, but tears, the called forth a plentifull affiftance from them, and then addressing herself to Mr. Allworthy, fhe faid (or rather cried): ' May it please ' your worfhip, there never was any poor woman fo injured as I am by that base man: for this is not the only instance of his falshood to me. No, may it please your worship, he hath injured my bed many's the good time and often. I could have put up with his drunkenness and neglect of his business, if he had not broke one of the facred commandiments. Befides, if it had been out of doors, I had not mattered it fo much; but with my own fervant, in my own house, under my own roof; to defile my own chafte bed, which to be fure he hath with his beaftly flinking whores. Yes, you villain, you have defiled ' my own bed, you have; and then you have charged me with bullocking you into owning the truth. It is very likely, an't please your worship, that I fhould bullock him - I have marks enow about my body to fhew of his cruelty to me. If you had been a man, you villain, you would have fcorned to injure a woman in that manner. But you an't ' half a man, you know it. - Nor have you been half ' a hufband to me. You need run after whores, you need, when I'm fure - And fince he provokes me, I am ready, an't please your worship, to take ' my bodily oath, that I found them a bed together. What, you have forgot, I suppose, when you beat me into a fit, and made the blood run down my ' forehead, because I only civilly taxed you with your ' adultery! but I can prove it by all my neighbours. 'You have almost broke my heart, you have, you have.

Here Mr. Allworthy interrupted, and begged her to be pacified, promiting her that The should have justice; then turning to Partridge, who stood aghast, one half of his wits being hurried away by surprise and the other half by fear, he said, he was forry to see there was so wicked a man in the world. He assured him, that his prevaricating and lying backward and forward was a great aggravation of his guilt: for which, the only atonement he could make was by confession and repentance. He exhorted him, therefore, to begin by immediately confessing the sact, and not to persist in denying what was so plainly proved against him, even by his own wife.

Here, reader, I beg your patience a moment, while I make a just compliment to the great wisdom and sagacity of our law, which refuses to admit the evidence of a wife for or against her husband. This, says a certain learned author, who, I believe, was never quoted before in any but a law-book, would be the means of creating an eternal dissension between them. It would, indeed, be the means of much perjury, and of much whipping, fining, imprisoning, transporting,

and hanging.

stoli

Partridge stood a while silent, till being bid to speak, he said, he had already spoken the truth, and appealed to heaven for his innocence, and lastly, to the girl herself, whom he desired his worship immediately to fend for; for he was ignorant, or at least pretended to be so, that she had lest that part of the country.

Mr. Allworthy, whose natural love of justice, joined to his coolness of temper, made him always a most patient magistrate in hearing all the witnesses which an accused person could produce in his desence, agreed

to defer his final determination of this matter, till the arrival of Jenny, for whom he immediately dispatched a messenger; and then having recommended peace between Partridge and his wife (though he addressed himself chiefly to the wrong person) he appointed them to attend again the third day: for he had sent Jenny a whole day's journey from his own house.

At the appointed time the parties all assembled, when the messenger returning brought word, that Jenny was not to be found: for that she had left her habitation a few days before, in company with a recruiting

officer.

d

d

e

d

T

e

1.

d

1

10

10

d

th

d

0

Mr. Allworthy then declared, that the evidence of fuch a flut as fhe appeared to be, would have deferved no credit; but he faid he could not help thinking that had the been prefent, and would have declared the truth. The must have confirmed what so many circumstances, together with his own confession, and the declaration of his wife, that The had caught her hufband in the fact, did fufficiently prove. He therefore once more exhorted Partridge to confess; but he still avowing his innocence, Mr. Allworthy declared himfelf fatisfied of his guilt, and that he was too bad a man to receive any encouragement from him. He therefore deprived him of his annuity, and recommended repentance to him, on account of another world, and industry to maintain himself and his wife in this.

There were not, perhaps, many more unhappy perfons, than poor Partridge. He had lost the best part of his income by the evidence of his wife, and yet was daily upbraided by her for having, among other things, been the occasion of depriving her of that

G 2 benefit;

ridenod

benefit; but fuch was his fortune, and he was obliged to fubmit to it.

Though I called him poor Partridge, in the last paragraph, I would have the reader rather impute that epithet to the compassion of my temper, than conceive it to be any declaration of his innocence. Whether he was innocent or not, will perhaps appear hereafter; but if the historic Muse hath entrusted me with any secrets, I will by no means be guilty of discovering

them till fhe fhall give me leave.

Here, therefore, the reader must suspend his curiosi-Certain it is, that whatever was the truth of the case, there was evidence more than sufficient to convict him before Allworthy; indeed much less would have fatisfied a bench of justices on an order of bastardy; and yet notwithstanding the positiveness of Mrs. Partridge, who would have taken the facrament upon the matter, there is a possibility that the schoolmaster was entirely innocent: for though it appeared clear, on comparing the time when Jenny departed from Little Baddington, with that of her delivery, that fhe had there conceived this infant, yet it by no means followed, of necessity, that Partridge must have been its father: for to omit other particulars, there was in the same house a lad near eighteen, between whom and Jenny, there had fublished sufficient intimacy to found a reasonable suspicion; and yet, so blind is jesloufy, this circumftance never once entered into the head of the enraged wife.

Whether Partridge repented or not, according to Mr. Allworthy's advice, is not so apparent. Certain it is, that his wife repented heartily of the evidence the had given against him; especially when the found

Mrs.

b

ff

te

8-

0-

g

e

d

n

r,

e

15

n

0

3-

to

in

Mrs. Deborah had deceived her, and refused to make any application to Mr. Allworthy on her behalf. She had, however, somewhat better success with Mrs. Blifil, who was, as the reader must have perceived, a much better tempered woman; and very kindly undertook to solicit her brother to restore the annuity. In which, though good nature might have some share, yet a stronger and more natural motive will appear in the next chapter.

These folicitations were nevertheless unsuccessful: for though Mr. Allworthy did not think, with some late writers, that mercy consists only in punishing offenders; yet he was as far from thinking that it is proper to this excellent quality to pardon great criminals wantonly, without any reason whatever. Any doubtfulness of the fact, or any circumstance of mitigation was never disregarded; but the petitions of an offender, or the intercessions of others, did not in the least affect him. In a word, he never pardoned, because the offender himself, or his friends, were unwilling that he should be punished.

Partridge and his wife were therefore both obliged to fubmit to their fate; which was indeed severe enough; for so far was he from doubling his industry on the account of his lessened income, that he did in a manner abandon himself to despair; and as he was by nature indolent, that vice now increased upon him, by which means he lost the little school he had; so that neither his wife nor himself would have had any bread to eat, had not the charity of some good christian interposed, and provided them with what was just sufficient for their sustenance.

As

As this fupport was conveyed to them by an unknown hand, they imagined, and so, I doubt not, will the reader, that Mr. Allworthy himself was their secret benefactor; who, though he would not openly encourage vice, could yet privately relieve the distresses of the vicious themselves, when these became too exquisite and disproportionate to their demerit. In which light, their wretchedness appeared now to Fortune herself; for she at length took pity on this miserable couple, and considerably lessened the wretched state of Partridge, by putting a final end to that of his wise, who soon after caught the small-pox, and died.

The justice which Mr. Allworthy had executed on Partridge, at first met with universal approbation; but no sooner had he felt its consequences, than his neighbours began to relent, and to compassionate his case; and presently after, to blame that as rigour and severity, which they before called justice. They now exclaimed against punishing in cold blood, and sang

forth the praises of mercy and forgiveness.

These cries were considerably increased by the death of Mrs. Partridge, which, though owing to the distemper above-mentioned, which is no consequence of poverty or distress, many were not as hamed to impute to Mr. Allworthy's severity, or, as they now termed

it, cruelty.

PA

Partridge, having now lost his wife, his school, and his annuity, and the unknown person having now discontinued the last-mentioned charity, resolved to change the scene, and lest the country where he was in danger of starving, with the universal compassion of all his neighbours.

CHAP. VII.

A short sketch of that felicity which prudent couples may extract from hatred, with a short apology for those people who overlook impersections in their friends.

THOUGH the captain had effectually demolished poor Partridge, yet had he not reaped the harvest he hoped for, which was to turn the foundling out of Mr. Allworthy's house.

On the contrary, that gentleman grew every day fonder of little Tommy, as if he intended to counter-balance his feverity to the father with extraordinary fondness and affection towards the son.

This a good deal foured the captain's temper, as did all the other daily infrances of Mr. Allworthy's generofity: for he looked on all fuch largeffes to be diminutions of his own wealth.

In this, we have faid, he did not agree with his wife; nor, indeed, in any thing else: for though an affection placed on the understanding is, by many wife persons, thought more durable than that which is sounded on beauty, yet it happened otherwise in the present case. Nay, the understandings of this couple were their principal bone of contention, and one great cause of many quarrels, which from time to time arose between them; and which at last ended, on the side of the lady, in a sovereign contempt for her husband; and on the husband's, in an utter abhorrence of his wife.

As these had both exercised their talents chiefly in the study of divinity, this was, from their first acquaintance, the most common topic of conversation between them. The captain, like a well bred man, had, before marriage, always given up his opinion to that of the lady; and this, not in the clumsy, aukward manner of a conceited blockhead, who, while he civilly yields to a superior in an argument, is desirous of being still known to think himself in the right. The captain, on the contrary, though one of the proudest fellows in the world, so absolutely yielded the victory to his antagonist, that she, who had not the least doubt of his sincerity, retired always from the dispute with an admiration of her own understanding, and a love for his.

But though this complaifance to one whom the captain thoroughly despised, was not so uneasy to him, as it would have been, had any hopes of preferment made it necessary to shew the same submission to a Hoadly, or to some other of great reputation in the science, yet even this cost him too much to be endured without some motive. Matrimony, therefore, having removed all such motives, he grew weary of this condescension, and began to treat the opinions of his wise with that haughtiness and insolence, which none but those who deserve some contempt themselves can bestow, and those only who deserve no contempt can

bear.

When the first torrent of tenderness was over, and when, in the calm and long interval between the fits, reason began to open the eyes of the lady, and she saw this alteration of behaviour in the captain, who, at length, answered all her arguments only with pish and pshaw,

pshaw, she was far from enduring the indignity with a tame submission. Indeed it at first so highly provoked her, that it might have produced some tragical event, had it not taken a more harmless turn, by filling her with the utmost contempt for her husband's understanding, which somewhat qualified her hatred towards him; though of this likewise she had a pretty moderate share.

The captain's hatred to her was of a purer kind: for as to any imperfections in her knowledge or understanding, he no more despised her for them than for her not being fix feet high. In his opinion of the female fex, he exceeded the moroseness of Aristotle himself: he looked on a woman as on an animal of domestic use, of somewhat higher consideration than a cat, fince her offices were of rather more importance; but the difference between these two was, in his estimation, fo fmall, that, in his marriage contracted with Mr. Allworthy's lands and tenements, it would have been pretty equal which of them he had taken into the bargain. And yet so tender was his pride, that it felt the contempt which his wife now began to express towards him; and this, added to the furfeit he had before taken of her love, created in him a degree of difgust and abhorrence, perhaps, hardly to be exceeded.

One fituation only of the marriage state is excluded from pleasure; and that is, a state of indifference; but as many of my readers, I hope, know what an exquisite delight there is in conveying pleasure to a beloved object, so some few, I am assaid, may have experienced the satisfaction of tormenting one we hate. It is, I apprehend, to come at this latter pleasure,

G 5

that

that we see both sexes often give up that ease in marriage, which they might otherwise possess, though their mate was never so disagreeable to them. Hence the wife often puts on fits of love and jealously, nay, even denies herself any pleasure, to disturb and prevent those of her husband; and he again, in return, puts frequent restraints on himself, and stays at home in company which he dislikes, in order to confine his wife to what she equally detests. Hence too must flow those tears which a widow sometimes so plentifully sheds over the ashes of a husband, with whom she led a life of constant disquiet and turbulency, and whom now she can never hope to torment any more.

But if ever any couple enjoyed this pleasure, it was at present experienced by the captain and his lady. It was always a sufficient reason to either of them to be obstinate in any opinion, that the other had previously afferted the contrary. If the one proposed any amusement, the other constantly objected to it: they never loved or hated, commended or abused, the same person. And for this reason, as the captain looked with an evil eye on the little foundling, his wife began now to

carefs it almost equally with her own child.

The reader will be apt to conceive, that this behaviour between the husband and wife did not greatly contribute to Mr. Allworthy's repose, as it tented so little to that serene happiness which he had designed for all three, from this alliance; but the truth is, though he might be a little disappointed in his sanguine expectations, yet he was so far from being acquainted with the whole matter: for as the captain was, from certain obvious reasons, much on his guard before him, the lady was obliged, for fear of her brother's displeasure,

pleasure, to pursue the same conduct. In fact, it is possible for a third person to be very intimate, nay, even to live long in the same house, with a married couple, who have any tolerable discretion, and not even guess at the sour sentiments which they bear to each other: for though the whole day may be sometimes too short for hatred, as well as for love; yet the many hours which they naturally spend together apart from all observers, surnish people, of tolerable moderation, with such ample opportunity for the enjoyment of either passion, that, if they love, they can support being a few hours in company without toying, or if they hate, without spitting in each other's faces.

It is possible, however, that Mr. Allworthy faw enough to render him a little uneafy; for we are not always to conclude, that a wife man is not hurt, because he doth not cry out and lament himself, like those of a childish or effeminate temper. But indeed it is possible he might see some faults in the captain. without any uneafiness at all: for men of true wisdom and goodness are contented to take persons and things as they are, without complaining of their imperfections, or attempting to amend them. They can fee a fault in a friend, a relation, or an acquaintance, without ever mentioning it to the parties themselves, or to any others; and this often without lessening their affection. Indeed, unless great discernment be tempered with this over-looking disposition, we ought never to contract friendship but with a degree of folly which we can deceive: for I hope my friends will pardon me, when I declare, I know none of them without a fault; and I should be forry if I could imagine, I had any friend who could not fee mine. Forgiveness,

of this kind, we give and demand in turn. It is an exercise of friendship, and perhaps none of the least pleasant. And this forgiveness we must bestow, without desire of amendment. There is, perhaps, no surer mark of folly, than an attempt to correct the natural infirmities of those we love. The finest composition of human nature, as well as the finest china, may have a flaw in it; and this I am asraid, in either case, is equally incurable; though, nevertheless, the pattern

may remain of the highest value.

Upon the whole, then, Mr. Allworthy certainly faw fome imperfections in the captain; but, as this was a very artful man, and eternally upon his guard before him, these appeared to him no more than blemishes in a good character; which his goodness made him overlook, and his wisdom prevented him from discovering to the captain himself. Very different would have been his sentimens, had he discovered the whole; which, perhaps, would in time have been the case, had the husband and wife long continued this kind of behaviour to each other; but this kind fortune took effectual means to prevent, by forcing the captain to do that which rendered him again dear to his wife, and restored all her tenderness and affection towards him.

CHAP. VIII.

A receipt to regain the lost affections of a wife, which hath never been known to fail in the most desperate cases.

THE captain was made large amends for the unpleafant minutes which he passed in the conversation of his wife, (and which were as few as he could

con-

contrive to make them) by the pleasant meditations

he enjoyed when alone.

These meditations were entirely employed on Mr. Allworthy's fortune; for first, he exercised much thought in calculating, as well as he could, the exact value of the whole; which calculations he often faw occasion to alter in his own favour: and, secondly, and chiefly, he pleafed himfelf with intended alterations in the house and gardens, and in projecting many other schemes, as well for the improvement of the estate, as of the grandeur of the place: for this purpose he applied himself to the studies of architecture and gardening, and read over many books on both these subiects; for these sciences, indeed, employed his whole time, and formed his only amusement. He, at last, completed a most excellent plan; and very forry we are, that it is not in our power to prefent it to our reader, fince even the luxury of the present age, I believe, would hardly match it. It had, indeed, in a fuperlative degree, the two principal ingredients which ferve to recommend all great and noble defigns of this nature; for it required an immoderate expence to execute, and a vast length of time to bring it to any fort of perfection. The former of these, the immense wealth of which the captain supposed Mr. Allworthy possessed, and which he thought himself sure of inheriting, promifed very effectually to supply; and the latter, the foundness of his own constitution, and his time of life, which was only what is called middle age, removed all apprehension of his not living to accomplish.

Nothing was wanting to enable him to enter upon the immediate execution of this plan, but the death of Mr. Allworthy; in calculating which he had employed much of his own algebra, besides purchasing every book extant that treats of the value of lives, reversions, &c. From all which he satisfied himself, that as he had every day a chance of this happening, so had he more than an even chance of its happening within a few years.

But while the captain was one day busied in deep contemplations of this kind, one of the most unlucky, as well as unseasonable accidents, happened to him. The utmost malice of fortune could, indeed, have contrived nothing so cruel, so mal-à-propos, so absolutely destructive to all his schemes. In short, not to keep the reader in long suspence, just at the very instant when his heart was exulting in meditations on the happiness which would accrue to him by Mr. Allworthy's death, he himself—died of an apoplexy.

This unfortunately befel the captain as he was taking his evening walk by himfelf, so that no body was present to lend him any affistance, if indeed any affistance could have preserved him. He took, therefore, measure of that proportion of soil, which was now become adequate to all his future purposes, and he lay dead on the ground, a great (though not a living) example of the truth of that observation of Horace:

- * Tu secanda marmora
- Locas sub ipsum funus : et sepulchri
 - · Immemor, struis domos.'

Which fentiment I shall thus give to the English reader: 'You provide the noblest materials for building, 'when

' when a pick-ax and a fpade are only necessary; and build houses of five hundred by a hundred seet,

' forgetting that of fix by two.'

CHAP. IX.

A proof of the infallibility of the foregoing receipt, in the lamentations of the widow, with other suitable decorations of death, such as physicians, &c. and an epitaph in

the true stile.

MR. Allworthy, his fifter, and another lady, were affembled at the accustomed hour in the supper-room, where having waited a considerable time longer than usual, Mr. Allworthy first declared, he began to grow uneasy at the captain's stay; (for he was always most punctual at his meals) and gave orders that the bell should be rung without the doors, and especially towards those walks which the captain was wont to use.

All these summons proving ineffectual, (for the captain had, by perverse accident, betaken himself to a new walk that evening) IMrs. Blish declared she was seriously frightened. Upon which the other lady, who was one of her most intimate acquaintance, and who well knew the true state of her affections, endeavoured all she could to pacify her; telling her—To be sure she could not help being uneasy; but that she should hope the best. That, perhaps, the sweetness of the evening had inticed the captain to go farther than his usual walk; or he might be detained at some neighbour's. Mrs. Blish answered: no; she was sure some accident had befallen him; for that he would

LINE W

would never flay out without sending her word, as he must know how uneasy it would make her. The other lady, having no other arguments to use, betook herself to the entreaties usual on such occasions, and begged her not to frighten herself, for it might be of very ill consequence to her own health; and, filling out a very large glass of wine, advised, and at

last prevailed with her to drink it.

Mr. Allworthy now returned into the parlour; for he had been himself in search after the captain. His countenance fufficiently shewed the consternation he was under, which indeed had a good deal deprived him of speech; but as grief operates variously on different minds, so the same apprehension which depresfed his voice, elevated that of Mrs. Blifil. She now began to bewail herfelf in very bitter terms, and floods of tears accompanied her lamentations, which the lady, her companion, declared fhe could not blame; but, at the same time, disfuaded her from indulging; attempting to moderate the grief of her friend, by philosophical observations on the many disappointments to which human life is daily fubject, which, the faid, was a fufficient confideration to fortify our minds against any accidents, how fudden or terrible foever. She faid, her brother's example ought to teach her patience, who, though indeed he could not be supposed as much concerned as herself, yet was, doubtless, very uneasy, though his resignation to the Divine Will had restrained his grief within due -bounds.

6 occa4

^{&#}x27;Mention not my brother,' faid Mrs. Blifil, 'I alone am the object of your pity. What are the terrors of friendship to what a wife feels on these

occasions? O he is lost! Somebody hath murdered him—I shall never see him more—Here a torrent of tears had the same consequence with what the suppression had occasioned to IVIr. Allworthy, and she remained silent.

At this interval a fervant came running in, out of breath, and cry'd out: 'The captain was found;' and, before he could proceed farther, he was followed by two more, bearing the dead body between

Here the curious reader may observe another diversity in the operations of grief: for as Mr. Allworthy had been before silent, from the same cause which had made his sister vociferous; so did the present sight, which drew tears from the gentleman, put an entire stop to those of the lady; who first gave a violent scream, and presently after fell into a fit.

The room was foon full of fervants, some of whom, with the lady visitant, were employed in care of the wife; and others, with Mr. Allworthy, assisted in carrying off the captain to a warm bed; where every method was tried, in order to restore him to life.

And glad fhould we be, could we inform the reader, that both these bodies had been attended with equal success; for those who undertook the care of the lady, succeeded so well, that after the fit had continued a decent time, she again revived, to their great satisfaction: but as to the captain, all experiments of bleeding, chasing, dropping, &c. proved ineffectual. Death, that inexorable judge, had passed sentence on him, and resulted to grant him a reprieve, though two doctors who arrived, and were fee'd at one and the same instant, were his counsel.

Vol. I. H These

These two doctors, whom, to avoid any malicious applications, we shall distinguish by the names of Dr. Y. and Dr. Z. having felt his pulse; to wit, Dr. Y. his right arm, and Dr. Z. his lest, both agreed that he was absolutely dead; but as to the distemper, or cause of his death, they differed; Dr. Y. holding that he died of an apoplexy, and Dr. Z. of an epilepsy.

Hence arose a dispute between the learned men, in which each delivered the reasons of their several opinions. These were of such equal force, that they served both to confirm either doctor in his own fentiments, and made not the least impression on his ad-

verfary.

To fay the truth, every physician, almost, hath his favourite disease, to which he ascribes all the victories obtained over human nature. The gout, the rheumatism, the stone, the gravel, and the consumption, have all their several patrons in the faculty; and none more than the nervous sever, or the sever on the spirits. And here we may account for those disagreements in opinion, concerning the cause of a patient's death, which sometimes occur between the most learned of the college; and which have greatly surprized that part of the world who have been ignorant of the fact we have above afferted.

The reader may, perhaps, be furprized, that inflead of endeavouring to revive the patient, the learned gentlemen should fall immediately into a dispute on the occasion of his death; but, in reality, all such experiments had been made before their arrival: for the captain was put into a warm bed, had his veins scarified, his forehead chafed, and all forts of strong

drops applied to his lips and noffrils. we amake and

.1 .Jo The

The physicians, therefore, finding themselves and ticipated in every thing they ordered, were at a loss how to apply that portion of time which is is usual and decent to remain for their see, and were therefore necessitated to find some subject or other for discourse; and what could more naturally present itself than that before-mentioned?

Our doctors were about to take their leave, when Mr. Allworthy, having given over the captain, and acquiefeed in the Divine Will, began to enquire after his fifter, whom he defired them to vifit before their

mine; but the continued a whole month waturisque

This lady was now recovered of her fit, and, to use the common phrase, as well as could be expected for one in her condition. The doctors, therefore, all previous ceremonies being complied with, as this was a new patient, attended, according to desire, and laid hold on each of her hands, as they had before done on those of the corpse.

The case of the lady was in the other extreme from that of her husband: for, as he was past all the affishance of physic, so in reality she required none.

There is nothing more unjust than the vulgar opinion, by which physicians are misrepresented as friends to death. On the contrary, I believe, if the number of those who recover by physic could be opposed to that of the martyrs to it, the former would rather exceed the latter. Nay, some are so cautious on this head, that to avoid a possibility of killing the patient, they abstain from all methods of curing, and prescribe nothing but what can neither do good nor harm. I have heard some of these, with great gravity, deliver it as a maxim: 'That nature should be H 2

left to do her own work, while the physician stands by, as it were, to clap her on the back, and encourage her when the doth well.

So there then did our doctors delight in death, that they discharged the corpse after a single see; but they were not so disgusted with their living patient; concerning whose case they immediately agreed, and fell

to prescribing with great diligence. W 210130b 1110

Whether, as the lady had, at first, persuaded the physicians to believe her ill, they had now, in return persuaded her to believe hersels so, I will not determine; but she continued a whole month with all the decorations of sickness. During this time she was visited by physicians, attended by nurses, and received constant messages from her acquaintance, to enquire after her health.

At length, the decent time for fickness and immoderate grief being expired, the doctors were discharged, and the lady began to see company, being altered only from what she was before, by that colour of sadness in which she had dressed her person and countenance.

The captain was now interred, and might, perhaps have already made a large progress towards oblivion, had not the friendship of Mr. Allworthy taken care to preserve his memory, by the following epitaph, which was written by a man of as great gemus as integrity, and one who perfectly well knew the captain.

car, they abilian from all methods of curing, and prefeite nothing but what can neither do good nor hum. I have head lone of these, with great each

ray, deliver it as a maxima. That nature should be east.

Here lies,
In Expectation of a joyful rising
The Body of
Captain JOHN BLIFIL.

LONDON had the Honour of his Birth, Oxford

of his Education. His Parts

were an Honour to his Profession and to his Country:

His life to his Religion
and human Nature.

He was a dutiful Son,
a tender Hufband,
an affectionate Father,
a most kind Brother,
a sincere Friend,
a devout Christian,
and a good Man,
His inconsolable Widow
hath erected this Stone,
The Monument of
His Virtues,

and her Affection.

rous. To place this who

and could a state of the consequent to were order

it the Legisland of the factor

BILL

HISTORY

OF A

Cupicin I MIN SELECT.

FOUNDLING.

BOOK III.

Which passed in the family of Mr. Allworthy, from the time when Tommy Jones arrived at the age of sourteen, till he attained the age of nineteen. In this book the reader may pick up some hints concerning the education of children.

CHAP. I.

Containing little or nothing.

HE reader will be pleased to remember, that, at the beginning of the second book of this history, we gave him a hint of our intention to pass over several large periods of time, in which nothing happened worthy of being recorded in a chronicle of this kind.

from

In so doing, we do not only consult our own dignity and ease, but the good and advantage of the reader: for besides, that, by these means, we prevent him from throwing away his time, in reading either without pleasure or emolument, we give him, at all such seasons, an opportunity of employing that wonderful sagacity of which he is master, by filling up these vacant spaces of time with his own conjectures; for which purpose, we have taken care to qualify him in

the preceding pages.

110 50 100 0

For instance, what reader but knows that Mr. All-worthy felt, at first, for the loss of his friend, those emotions of grief, which, on such occasions, enter into all men whose hearts are not composed of slint, or their heads of as solid materials? Again, what reader doth not know that philosophy and religion in time moderated, and at last extinguished this grief? The former of these teaching the folly and vanity of it, and the latter, correcting it as unlawful; and at the same time assuaging it, by raising suture hopes and assurances, which enable a strong and religious mind to take leave of a friend, on his death-bed, with little less indifference than if he was preparing for a long journey; and, indeed, with little less hope of seeing him again.

Nor can the judicious reader be at a greater loss on account of Mrs. Bridget Blifil, who, he may be affured, conducted herself through the whole season, in which grief is to make its appearance on the outside of the body, with the strictest regard to all the rules of custom and decency, suiting the alterations of her countenance to the several alterations of her habit: for as this changed from weeds to black,

H 4

from black to grey, from grey to white, so did her countenance change from dismal to forrowful, from sorrowful to sad, and from sad to serious, till the day came in which she was allowed to return to her

former ferenity.

We have mentioned thefe two, as examples only of the task which may be imposed on readers of the lowest class. Much higher and harder exercises of judgment and penetration may reasonably be expected from the upper graduates in criticism. Many notable discoveries will, I doubt not, be made by such, of the transactions which happened in the family of our worthy man, during all the years which we have thought proper to pass over: for though nothing worthy of a place in this history occurred within that period; yet did several incidents happen of equal importance with those reported by the daily and weekly historians of the age, in reading which, great numbers of persons consume a considerable part of their time, very little, I am afraid, to their emolument. Now, in the conjectures here proposed, some of the most excellent faculties of the mind may be employed to much advantage. fince it is a more useful capacity to be able to foretel the actions of men, in any circumstance, from their characters, than to judge of their characters from their actions. The former, I own, requires the greater penetration; but may be accomplished by true fagacity, with no less certainty than the latter.

As we are fensible that much the greatest part of our readers are very eminently possessed of this quality, we have left them a space of twelve years to exert it in; and shall now bring forth our hero, at about fourteen

fourteen years of age, not questioning that many have been long impatient to be introduced to his acquaintance.

CHAP. II.

The hero of this great history appears with very bad omens. A little tale, of so LOW a kind, that some may think it not worth their notice. A word or two concerning a 'squire, and more relating to a gamekeeper, and a school-master.

A S we determined when we first sat down to write this history, to flatter no man, but to guide our pen throughout by the directions of truth, we are obliged to bring our hero on the stage in a much more disadvantageous manner that we could wish; and to declare honestly, even at his first appearance, that it was the universal opinion of all Mr. All-worthy's family, that he was certainly born to be

hanged.

Indeed, I am forry to fay, there was too much reafon for this conjecture. The lad having, from his earliest years, discovered a propensity to many vices, and especially to one, which hath as direct a tendency as any other to that fate, which we have just now obferved to have been prophetically denounced against him. He had been already convicted of three robberies, viz. of robbing an orchard, of stealing a duck out of a farmer's yard, and of picking Master Blifil's pocket of a ball.

The vices of this young man were, moreover, heightened, by the disadvantageous light in which

H 5 they

they appeared, when opposed to the virtues of Master Blifil, his companion: a youth of so different a cast from little Jones, that not only the family, but all the neighbourhood, resounded his praises. He was, indeed, a lad of a remarkable disposition; sober, discreet, and pious, beyond his age; qualities which gained him the love of every one who knew him, whilst Tom Jones was universally disliked; and many expressed their wonder, that Mr. Allworthy would suffer such a lad to be educated with his nephew, lest the morals of the latter should be corrupted by his example.

An incident which happened about this time, will fet the character of these two lads more fairly before the discerning reader, than is in the power of the

longest differtation.

Tom Jones, who, bad as he is, must ferve for the hero of this hiftory, had only one friend among all the fervants of the family; for, as to Mrs. Wilkins, The had long fince given him up, and was perfectly reconciled to her mistress. This friend was the gamekeeper, a fellow of a loofe kind of disposition, and who was thought not to entertain much ftricter notions concerning the difference of meum and tuum, than the young gentleman himself. And hence, this friend-Thip gave occasion to many farcastical remarks among the domestics, most of which were either proverbs before, or, at least, are become so now; and, indeed, the wit of them all may be comprifed in that fhort Latin proverb: 'Noscitur a socio,' which, I think, is thus expressed in English: 'You may know him by the company he keeps.'

To fay the truth, some of that atrocious wickedness in Jones, of which we have just mentioned three ex-

amples,

amples, might, perhaps, be derived from the encouragement he had received from this fellow, who, in two or three instances, had been what the law calls an acceffary after the fact. For the whole duck, and great part of the apples, were converted to the use of the game-keeper, and his family. Though, as Jones alone was discovered, the poor lad bore not only the whole smart, but the whole blame; both which fell again to his lot, on the following occasion.

Contiguous to Mr. Allworthy's estate, was the manor of one of those gentlemen, who are called prefervers of the game. This species of men, from the great severity with which they revenge the death of a hare, or a partridge, might be thought to cultivate the same superstition with the Bannians in India; many of whom, we are told, dedicate their whole lives to the preservation and protection of certain animals, was it not that our English Bannians, while they preserve them from other enemies, will most unmercifully slaughter whole horse-loads themselves, so that they stand clearly acquitted of any such heathenish superstition.

I have, indeed, a much better opinion of this kind of men than is entertained by some, as I take them to answer the order of nature, and the good purposes for which they were ordained, in a more ample manner than many others. Now, as Horace tells us, that there are a fet of human beings,

Fruges consumere nati.

Born to confume the fruits of the earth.' So, I make no manner of doubt but that there are others,

Feras consumere nati.

Born to confume the beafts of the field, or, as it is commonly called, the game; and none, I believe, will deny, but that those squires fulfil this end of their creation.

Little Jones went one day a fhooting with the game-keeper; when, happening to spring a covey of partridges, near the border of that manor over which fortune, to fulfil the wise purposes of nature, had planted one of the game-consumers, the birds flew into it, and were marked (as it is called) by the two sportsinen, in some surze-bushes, about two or three hundred paces beyond Mr. Allworthy's dominions.

Mr. Allworthy had given the fellow strict orders, on pain of forfeiting his place, never to trespass on any of his neighbours; no more on those who were less rigid in this matter, than on the lord of this manor. With regard to others, indeed, these orders had not been always very scrupulously kept; but as the disposition of the gentleman with whom the partridges had taken fanctuary, was well known, the game-keeper had never yet attempted to invade his territories. Nor had he done it now, had not the younger sportsman, who was excessively eager to pursue the slying game, over-persuaded him; but Jones being very importunate, the other, who was himself keen enough after the sport, yielded to his persuasions, entered the manor, and shot one of the partridges.

The gentleman himself was at that time on horse-back, at a little distance from them; and hearing the gun go off, he immediately made towards the place, and discovered poor Tom: for the game-keeper had leapt into the thickest part of the furze-brake, where

he had happily concealed himfelf.

The

The gentleman having fearched the lad, and found the partridge upon him, denounced great vengeance, swearing he would acquaint IVIr. Allworthy. He was as good as his word; for he rode immediately to his house, and complained of the trespass on his manor, in as high terms, and as bitter language, as if his house had been broken open, and the most valuable furniture stole out of it. He added, that some other person was in his company, though he could not discover him; for that two guns had been discharged almost in the same instant. And, says he, "we have "found only this partridge, but the Lord knows "what mischief they have done."

At his return home, Tom was prefently convened before Mr. Allworthy. He owned the fact, and alledged no other excuse but what was really true, vizithat the covey was originally sprung in Mr. All

Worthy's rown manorsq reeper leanen and the roll

Tom was then interrogated who was with him which Mr. Allworthy declared he was resolved to know, acquainting the culprit with the circumstance of the two guns, which had been deposed by the squire and both his servants; but Tom stoutly persisted in afferting that he was alone: yet to say the truth, he hesitated a little at first, which would have confirmed Mr. Allworthy's belief, had, what the squire and his servants said, wanted any further confirmation.

The game-keeper being a fuspected person, was now fent for, and the question was put to him; but he, relying on the promise which Tom had made him; to take all upon himself very resolutely denied being in company with the young gentleman, or indeed having seen him the whole afternoon.

Mr.

1:

1

Mr. Allworthy then turned towards Tom, with more than usual anger in his countenance, and advised him to confess who was with him, repeating, that he was resolved to know. The lad, however, still maintained his resolution, and was disnissed with much wrath by Mr. Allworthy, who told him, he should have to the next morning to consider of it, when he should be questioned by another person, and in another manner.

Poor Jones spent a very melancholy night, and the more so, as he was without his usual companion: for Master Bliss was gone abroad on a visit with his mother. Fear of the punishment he was to suffer was on this occasion his least evil; his chief anxiety being, lest his constancy should fail him, and he should be brought to betray the game-keeper, whose ruin he knew must now be the consequence.

Nor did the game-keeper pass his time much better. He had the same apprehensions with the youth; for whose honour he had likewise a much renderer

regard than for his fkin also on minimuos world

In the morning, when Tom attended the reverend Mr. Thwackum, the person to whom Mr. Allworthy had committed the instruction of the two boys, he had the same questions put to him by that gentleman, which he had been asked the evening before, to which he returned the same answers. The consequence of this was, so severe a whipping, that it possibly sell little short of the torture with which consessions are in some countries extorted from criminals.

Tom bore his punishment with great resolution; and though his master asked him between every stroke, whether he would not confest, he was contented

tented to be flead rather than betray his friend, or break the promise he had made. O the part and trans

The game-keeper was now relieved from his anxiety, and Mr. Allworthy himfelf began to be concerned at Tom's fufferings, for, befides that Mr. Thwackum, being highly enraged that he was not able to make the boy fay what he himself pleased, had carried his feverity much beyond the good man's intention, this latter began now to suspect that the squire had been mistaken; which his extreme eagerness and anger feemed to make probable; and as for what the fervants had faid in confirmation of their mafter's account, he laid no great stress upon that. Now, as cruelty and injustice were two ideas, of which Mr. Allworthy could by no means support the confciousness a fingle moment, he fent for Tom, and after many kind and friendly exhortations, faid: I am convinced, my dear child, that my fuspicions have wronged you; I am forry that you have been to fe-' verely punished on this account.' - And at last gave him a little horse to make him amends; again repeating his forrow for what had past.

Tom's guilt now flew in his face more than any feverity could make him. He could more eafily bear the lashes of Thwackum, than the generosity of Allworthy. The tears burst from his eyes, and he fell upon his knees, crying: 'Oh! Sir, you are too good for me. Indeed you are. Indeed, I don't deferve it.' And at that very inflant, from the fulness of his heart, had almost betrayed the secret; but the good genius of the game-keeper fuggested to him? what might be the consequence to the poor fellow;

and this confideration fealed his lips.

Thwackum

R

I Thwackum did all he could to diffuade Allworthy from fhewing any compassion or kindness to the boy, saying: 'He had persisted in an untruth:' and gave some hints, that a second whipping might probably bring the matter to light.

But Mr. Allworthy absolutely refused to consent to the experiment. He said, the boy had suffered enough already, for concealing the truth, even if he was guilty, seeing that he could have no motive but a

mistaken point of honour for so doing.

Honour! cry'd Thwackum, with fome warmth, mere stubborness and obstinacy! Can honour teach any one to tell a lie, or can any honour exist indepen-

dent of religion? reshi own enew sometime the village

-or mage

This discourse happened at table when dinner was just ended; and there were present Mr. Allworthy, Mr. Thwackum, and a third gentleman, who now entered into the debate, and whom, before we proceed any farther, we shall briefly introduce to our reader's acquaintance.

CHAP. III.

The character of Mr. Square the philosopher, and of Mr. Thwackum the divine; with a dispute concerning—.

Mr. Square. His natural parts were not of the first rate, but he had greatly improved them by a learned education. He was deeply read in the ancients, and a profest master of all the works of Plato and Aristotle. Upon which great models he had principally formed himself,

himself, fometimes according to the opinions of the one, and fometimes with that of the other. In morals he was a profest Platonist, and in religion he inclined to be an Aristotelian. and and medication of bolissic

But though he had, as we have faid, formed his morals on the Platonic model, yet he perfectly agreed with the opinion of Aristotle; in considering that great man rather in the quality of a philosopher or a fpeculatift, than as a legislator. This sentiment he carried a great way; indeed, so far, as to regard all virtue as matter of theory only. This, it is true, he never affirmed, as I have heard, to any one; and vet upon the least attention to his conduct, I cannot help thinking, it was his real opinion, as it will perfectly reconcile some contradictions, which might otherwise appear in his character. We want it with the liw I

This gentleman and Mr. Thwackum scarce ever met without a disputation; for their tenets were indeed diametrically opposite to each other. Square held human nature to be the perfection of all virtue, and that vice was a deviation from our nature in the fame manner as deformity of body is. Thwackum, on the contrary, maintained that the human mind fince the fall, was nothing but a fink of iniquity, till purified and redeemed by grace. In one point only they agreed, which was, in all their discourses on morality never to mention the word goodness. The favourite phrase of the former, was the natural beauty of virme; that of the latter, was the divine power of grace. The former measured all actions by the unalterable rule of right, and the eternal fitness of things; the latter decided all matters by authority; but, in doing this, he always used the scriptures and their commentators, as the Vol. I.

the lawyer doth his Coke upon Littleton, where the comment is of equal authority with the text.

After this short introduction, the reader will be pleased to remember, that the parson had concluded his speech with a triumphant question, to which he had apprehended no answer, viz. Can any honour

exist independent on religion?

To this Square answered, that it was impossible to discourse philosophically concerning words, till their meaning was first established; that there were scarce any two words of a more vague and uncertain signification, than the two he had mentioned: for that there were almost as many different opinions concerning homour, as concerning religion. 'But, says he, if by honour you mean the true natural beauty of virtue, I will maintain it may exist independent of any religion whatever. Nay, (added he) you yourself will allow it may exist independent of all but one: 'So will a Mahometan, a Jew, and all the maintain ers of all the different sects in the world.'

Thwackum replied, this was arguing with the usual malice of all the enemies to the true church. He said, he doubted not but that all the insidels and hereticks in the world would, if they could, confine honour to their own absurd errors, and damnable deceptions; but honour, says he, is not therefore manifold, because there are many absurd opinions about it; nor is religion manifold, because there are various

fects and herefies in the world. When I mention

religion, I mean the christian religion; and not
only the christian religion, but the protestant religion; and not only the protestant religion, but the

church of England. And when I mention honour,

I mean that mode of divine grace, which is not only confiftent with, but dependent upon, this religion; and is confiftent with and dependent upon no other. Now to fay that the honour I here mean, and which was, I thought, all the honour I could be supposed to mean, will uphold, much less dictate, an untruth, is to affert an absurdity too skocking to be

conceived.

' I purposely avoided,' says Square, 'drawing a conclusion which I thought evident from what I have faid; but if you perceived it, I am fure you have not attempted to answer it. However, to drop the article of religion, I think it is plain, from what you have faid, that we have different ideas of honour; or why do we not agree in the same terms of its explanation? I have afferted, that true honour and true virtue are almost fynonimous terms, and they are both founded on the unalterable rule of right, and the eternal fitness of things; to which an untruth being absolutely repugnant and contrary, it is certain that true honour cannot support an untruth. In this, therefore, I think we are agreed; but that this honour can be faid to be founded on religion, to which it is antecedent, if by religion be meant any positive law.

'I agree,' answered Thwackum, with great warmth, with a man who afferts honour to be antecedent to

religion! - Mr. Allworthy, did I agree -?'

He was proceeding, when Mr. Allworthy interposed, telling them very coldly, they had both mistaken his meaning; for that he had said nothing of true honour.— It is possible, however, he would not have easily quieted the disputants, who were

1 2

"OID

growing equally warm, had not another matter now fallen out, which put a final end to the conversation at present.

CHAP. IV.

Containing a necessary apology for the Author; and a childish incident, which perhaps requires an apology likewise.

BEFORE I proceed farther, I shall beg leave to obviate some misconstructions, into which the zeal of some few readers may lead them; for I would not willingly give offence to any, especially to men who are warm in the cause of virtue or religion.

I hope, therefore, no man will, by the groffest misunderstanding, or perversion of my meaning, misrepresent me, as endeavouring to cast any ridicule on the greatest perfections of human nature; and which do, indeed, alone purify and enoble the heart of man, and raise him above the brute creation. This, reader, I will venture to say, (and by how much the better man you are yourself, by so much the more will you be inclined to believe me), that I would rather have buried the sentiments of these two persons in eternal oblivion, than have done any injury to either of these glorious causes.

On the contrary, it is with a view to their fervice that I have taken upon me to record the lives and actions of two of their false and pretended champions. A treacherous friend is the most dangerous enemy; and I will say boldly, that both religion and virtue have received more real discredit from hypocrites, than the wittiest profligates or insidels could ever cast

upon

upon them: nay farther, as these two, in their purity, are rightly called the bands of civil society, and are indeed the greatest of blessings; so when possoned and corrupted with fraud, pretence, and affectation, they have become the worst of civil curses, and have enabled men to perpetrate the most cruel mischiess to

their own species, and and our a hard and in

Indeed, I doubt not but this ridicule will in general be allowed; my chief apprehension is, as many true and just sentiments often came from the mouths of these persons, lest the whole should be taken together, and I should be conceived to ridicule all alike. Now the reader will be pleased to consider, that as neither of these men were sools, they could not be supposed to have holden none but wrong principles, and to have uttered nothing but absurdates; what injustice, therefore, must I have done to their characters, had I see lected only what was bad, and how horribly wretched and maimed must their arguments have appeared!

Upon the whole, it is not religion or virtue, but the want of them which is here exposed. Had not Thwackum too much neglected virtue, and Square religion, in the composition of their several systems, and had not both utterly discarded all natural goodness of heart, they had never been represented as the objects of derision in this history; in which we will

now proceed. abuse and a tire want town bloodly

This matter, then, which put an end to the debate mentioned in the last chapter, was no other than a quarrel between Master Blissl and Tom Jones, the consequence of which had been a bloody nose to the former; for though Master Blissl, notwithstanding he was the younger, was in size above the other's match,

I 3

yet Tom was much his superior at the noble art of

boxing. But we sold lives to space the lines while

Tom, however, cautiously avoided all engagements with that youth; for besides that Tommy Jones was an inosfensive lad amidst all his roguery, and really loved Blisil, Mr. Thwackum being always the second of the latter, would have been sufficient to deter him.

But well fays a certain author: no man is wife at all hours; it is therefore no wonder that a boy is not fo. A difference arifing at play between the two lads, Mafter Blifil called Tom a beggarly baftard. Upon which the latter, who was fomewhat passionare in his disposition, immediately caused that phanomenon in the face of the former, which we have above remembered.

Master Blisil now, with his blood running from his nose, and the tears galloping after from his eyes, appeared before his uncle, and the tremendous Thwackum. In which court an indictment of assault, battery, and wounding, was instantly preferred against Tom; who in his excuse only pleaded the provocation, which was indeed all the matter that Mr. Blisil had omitted.

It is indeed possible, that this circumstance might have escaped his memory; for, in his reply, he positively insisted, that he had made use of no such appellation; adding: 'Heaven forbid such naughty words

fhould ever come out of his mouth. bear

Tom, though against all form of law, rejoined in affirmance of the words. Upon which Master Bliss said: 'It is no wonder. Those who will tell one sib, will hardly stick at another. If I had told my masser such a wicked sib as you have done, I should be as hamed to shew my face.'

· What

'What fib, child?' cries Thwackum pretty eagerly.'

'Why, he told you that nobody was with him a' fhooting when he killed the partridge; but he knows, (here he burst into a flood of tears), yes, he

knows; for he confessed it to me, that Black George

the game-keeper was there. Nay, he faid, wes,

you did. — deny it if you can, that you would not have confest the truth, though master had cut you

to pieces it and any aniverse of the recenting on I

At this the fire flashed from Thwackum's eyes, and he cried out in triumph: 'Oh! oh! this is your 'mistaken notion of honour! This is the boy who 'was not to be whipped again!' But Mr. Allworthy, with a more gentle aspect, turned towards the lad, and said: 'Is this true, child! How came you to 'persist so obstinately in a falsehood!'

Tom faid: He fcorned a lie as much as any one; but he thought his honour engaged him to act as he did; for he had promifed the poor fellow to conceal him: which, he faid, he thought himself farther obliged to, as the game-keeper had begged him not to go into the gentleman's manor, and had at laft gone himself in compliance with his persuasions." He faid: 'this was the whole truth of the matter, and he would take his oath of it; and concluded with very paffionately begging Mr. Allworthy: 4 to have compassion on the poor fellow's family, especially as he himself only had been guilty; and the other had been very difficultly prevailed on to do what he did. Indeed, Sir,' faid he, 'it could hardly be called a fie that I told; for the poor fellow was entirely innocent of the whole matter. I should have gone alone ' after the birds; nay, I did go at first, and he only ' followed 14

followed me to prevent more mischief. Do, pray, Sir, let me be punished; take my little horse away

again; but pray, Sir, forgive poor George.

Mr. Allworthy hesitated a few moments, and then dismissed the boys, advising them to live more friendly and peaceably together.

chap. v.

The opinions of the divine and the philosopher concerning the two boys; with some reafons for their opinions, and other matters.

It is probable, that by disclosing this fecret, which had been communicated in the utmost confidence to him, young Blifil preserved his companion from a good last hing: for the offence of the bloody nose would have been of itself sufficient cause for Thwackum to have proceeded to correction; but now this was totally absorbed in the consideration of the other matter; and with regard to this, Mr. Allworthy declared privately, he thought the boy deserved reward rather than punishment; so that Thwackum's hand was with-held by a general pardon.

Thwackum, whose meditations were full of birch, exclaimed against this weak, and, as he said he would venture to call it, wicked lenity. To remit the punishment of such crimes was, he said, to encourage them. He enlarged much on the correction of children, and quoted many texts from Salomon, and others; which being to be found in so many other books, shall not be found here. He then applied himself to the vice of lying, on which head he was altogether as learned

as he had been on the other.

Lawolfet

Square

for

Square faid, he had been endeavouring to reconcile the behaviour of Tom with his idea of perfect virtue; but could not. He owned there was fomething which at first sight appeared like fortitude in the action; but as fortitude was a virtue, and falshood a vice; they could by no means agree or unite together. He added, that as this was in some measure to consound virtue and vice, it might be worth Mr. Thwackum's consideration, whether a larger castigation might not be laid on, upon that account.

As both these learned men concurred in censuring Jones, so were they no less unanimous in applauding Master Bliss. To bring truth to light, was by the parson afferred to be the duty of every religious man; and by the philosopher this was declared to be highly conformable with the rule of right, and the eternal

and unalterable fitness of things. Dood control of the

All this, however, weighed very little with Mr. All-worthy. He could not be prevailed on to figh the warrant for the execution of Jones. There was something within his own breast with which the invincible sidelity which that youth had preserved, corresponded much better than it had done with the religion of Thwackum, or with the virtue of Square. He therefore strictly ordered the former of these gentlemen to abstain from laying violent hands on Tom for what had past. The pedagogue was obliged to obey these orders; but not without great reluctance, and frequent mutterings, that the boy would be certainly spoiled.

Towards the game-keeper the good man behaved with more feverity. He presently summoned that poor fellow before him, and after many bitter remonstrances, paid him his wages, and dismiss him from his service:

for Mr. Allworthy rightly observed, that there was a great difference between being guilty of a fall hood to excuse yourself, and to excuse another. He likewise urged, as the principal motive to his inflexible severity against this man, that he had basely suffered Tom Jones to undergo so heavy a punishment for his sake, whereas he ought to have prevented it by making the

discovery himself. Here's ad mistra it sair bus vottiv

When this flory became public, many people differed from Square and Thwackum, in judging the conduct of the two lads on the occasion. Master Blifil was generally called a fneaking rafcal, a poor-spirited wretch, with other epithets of the like kind; whilft Tom was honoured with the appellations of a brave lad, a jolly dog, and an honest fellow. Indeed his behaviour to black George much ingratiated him with all the fervants; for though that fellow was before univerfally difliked, yet he was no fooner turned away, than he was as univerfally pitied; and the friendship and gallantry of Tom Jones was celebrated by them all with the highest applause; and they condemned Mafter Blifil, as openly as they durft, without incurring the danger of offending his mother. For all this, however, poor Tom smarted in the flesh; for though Thwackum had been inhibited to exercise his arm on the foregoing account, yet, as the proverb fays: It is easy to find a stick, &c. So it was easy to find a rod; and, indeed, the not being able to find one was the only thing which could have kept Thwackum any long time from chaftifing poor Jones. of the total

Had the bare delight in the sport been the only inducement to the pedagogue, it is probable, Master Blish would likewise have had his share; but though

Mr.

Mr. Allworthy had given him frequent orders to make no difference between the lads, yet was Thwackum altogether as kind and gentle to this youth, as he was harsh, nay even barbarous to the other. To say the truth, Blifil had greatly gained his master's affections; partly by the profound respect he always shewed his person, but much more by the decent reverence with which he received his doctrine; for he had got by heart, and frequently repeated his phrases, and maintained all his master's religious principles with a zeal which was surprising in one so young, and which greatly endeared him to the worthy preceptor.

Tom Jones, on the other hand, was not only deficient in outward tokens of respect, often forgetting to pull off his hat, or to bow at his master's approach; but was altogether as unmindful both of his master's precepts and example. He was indeed a thoughtless, giddy youth, with little sobriety in his manners, and less in his countenance; and would often very impudently and indecently laugh at his companion for his

lo diling edr being ler vibrol

ferious behaviour.

Mr. Square had the same reason for his preference of the former lad; for Tom Jones shewed no more regard to the learned discourses, which this gentleman would sometimes throw away upon him, than to those of Thwackum. He once ventured to make a jest of the rule of right; and at another time said, he believed there was no rule in the world capable of making such a man as his father; (for so IVIr. Allworthy suffered himself to be called.)

Master Bliss, on the contrary, had address enough at fixteen to recommend himself at one and the same time to both these opposites. With one he was all re-

ligion;

tigion; with the other he was all virtue. And when both were present, he was profoundly silent, which both interpreted in his favour and in their own.

Nor was Blifil contented with flattering both thefe gentlemen to their faces; he took frequent occasions of praising them behind their backs to Allworthy; before whom, when they two were alone, and his uncle commended any religious or virtuous fentiment (for many fuch came constantly from him) he feldom failed to ascribe it to the good instructions he had received from either Thwackum or Square: for he knew his uncle repeated all fuch compliments to the persons for whose use they were meant; and he found by experience the great impressions which they made on the philosopher, as well as on the divine: for, to fay the truth, there is no kind of flattery fo irreliftible as this, at fecond hand, and the second is accurate

The young gentleman, moreover, foon perceived how extremely grateful all those panegyrics on his instructors were to Mr. Allworthy himself, as they so loudly resounded the praise of that singular plan of education which he had laid down: for this worthy man having observed the imperfect institution of our public schools, and the many vices which boys were there liable to learn, had refolved to educate his nephew, as well as the other lad, whom he had in a manner adopted, in his own house; where he thought their morals would escape all that danger of being corrupted, to which they would be unavoidably exposed in any public school or university.

Having therefore determined to commit these boys to the tuition of a private tutor, Mr. Thwackum was recommended to him for that office, by a very partinoigil

cular

cular friend, of whose understanding Mr. Allworthy had a great opinion, and in whose integrity he placed much considence. This Thwackum was fellow of a college, where he almost entirely resided; and had a great reputation for learning, religion, and sobriety of manners. And these were doubtless the qualifications, by which Mr. Allworthy's friend had been induced to recommend him; though indeed this friend had some obligations to Thwackum's family, who were the most considerable persons in a borough which that

gentleman represented in parliament.

Thwackum, at his first arrival, was extremely agreeable to Allworthy; and indeed he perfectly answered the character which had been given of him. Upon longer acquaintance, however, and more intimate conversation, this worthy man saw infirmities in the tutor. which he could have wifhed him to have been without: though as those seemed greatly over-balanced by his good qualities, they did not incline Mr. Allworthy to part with him; nor would they indeed have justified fuch a proceeding: for the reader is greatly mistaken. if he conceives that Thwackum appeared to Mr. Allworthy in the same light as he doth to him in this history; and he is as much deceived, if he imagines. that the most intimate acquaintance which he himself could have had with that divine, would have informed him of those things which we, from our inspiration. are enabled to open and discover. Of readers who from fuch conceits as these condemn the wisdom or penetration of Mr. Allworthy, I shall not scruple to fay, that they make a very bad and ungrateful use: of that knowledge which we have communicated to them.

Thefe

These apparent errors in the doctrine of Thwackum. ferved greatly to palliate the contrary errors in that of Square, which our good man no less faw and condemned. He thought indeed that the different exuberancies of these gentlemen, would correct their different imperfections; and that from both, especially with his affiftance, the two lads would derive fufficient precepts of true religion and virtue. If the event happened contrary to his expectations, this possibly proceeded from some fault in the plan itself; which the reader hath my leave to discover, if he can: for we do not pretend to introduce any infallible characters into this history; where we hope nothing will be found which hath never yet been feen in human nature.

. To return therefore; the reader will not, I think, wonder that the different behaviour of the two lads above commemorated, produced the different effects, of which he hath already feen fome inflance; and befides this, there was another reason for the conduct of the philosopher and the pedagogue; but this being matter of great importance, we shall reveal it in the

next chapter.

CHAP. VL

Containing a better reason still for the beforementioned opinions.

T is to be known then, that thefe two learned perfonages, who have lately made a confiderable figure on the theatre of this history, had from their first arrival at Mr. Allworthy's house, taken so great an affection, the one to his virtue, the other to his religion, that they had meditated the closest alliance with him.

For

For this purpose they had cast their eyes on that fair widow, whom, though we have not for some time made any mention of her, the reader, we trust, hath not forgot. Mrs. Bliss was indeed the object to which

they both aspired.

It may feem remarkable, that of four persons whom we have commemorated at Mr. Allworthy's house, three of them should fix their inclinations on a lady who was never greatly celebrated for her beauty, and who was, moreover, now a little descended into the vale of years; but in reality bosom friends, and intimate acquaintance, have a kind of natural propensity to particular females at the house of a friend, viz. to his grand-mother, mother, sister, daughter, aunt, niece; or cousin, when they are rich; and to his wife, sister, daughter, niece, cousin, mistress, or servant-

maid, if they should be handsome.

We would not, however, have our reader imagine, that persons of such characters as were supported by Thwackum and Square, would undertake a matter of this kind, which hath been a little cenfured by fome rigid moralists, before they had thoroughly examined it, and confidered whether it was: (as Shakespear phrases it) 'Stuff o'th' conscience, or no.' Thwackum was encouraged to the undertaking by reflecting, that to covet your neighbour's fifter is no where forbidden; and he knew it was a rule in the construction of all laws, that: 'Expression facit cessare tacitum.' The fense of which is: 'When a law-giver sets down ' plainly his whole meaning, we are prevented from ' making him mean what we please ourselves.' As fome instances of women, therefore, are mentioned in the divine law, which forbids us to covet our neighbour's

bour's goods and that of a fifter omitted, he concluded it to be lawful. And as to Square, who was in his person what is called a jolly fellow, or a widow's man, he easily reconciled his choice to the e-

ternal fitness of things.

Now, as both thefe gentlemen were industrious in taking every opportunity of recommending themfelves to the widow, they apprehended one certain method was, by giving her fon the constant preference to the other lad; and, as they conceived the kindness and affection which Mr. Allworthy Thewed the latter, must be highly difagreeable to her, they doubted not but the laying hold on all occasions to degrade and villify him, would be highly pleasing to her; who, as she hated the boy, must love all those who did him any hurt. In this Thwackum had the advantage; for while Square could only scarify the poor lad's reputation, he could flea his fkin; and indeed, he confidered every lash he gave him as a compliment paid to his miftress; so that he could, with the utmostpropriety, repeat this old flogging line: Caftigo te non quod odio habeam. sed quod AMEM; I chastise thee not out of hatred, but out of love.' And this, indeed, he often had in his mouth, or rather, according to the old phrase, never more properly applied, at his fingers ends.

For this reason principally, the two gentlemen concurred, as we have seen above, in their opinion concerning the two lads: this being, indeed, almost the only instance of their concurring on any point: for, beside the difference of their principles, they had both long ago strongly suspected each other's design, and hated one another with no little degree of inveteracy.

This

This mutual animofity was a good deal increased by their alternate fuccesses: for Mrs. Blifil knew what they would be at long before they imagined it; or, indeed, intended the thould: for they proceeded with great caution, left fhe should be offended, and acquaint Mr. Allworthy. But they had no reason for any fuch fear; fhe was well enough pleafed with a passion, of which she intended none should have any fruits but herfelf. And the only fruit fhe defigned for herfelf, were flattery and courtfhip; for which purpose, she soothed them by turns, and a long time equally. She was, indeed, rather inclined to favour the parson's principles; but Square's person was more agreeable to her eye, for he was a comely man; whereas the pedagogue did in countenance very nearly refemble that gentleman, who, in the Harlot's Progrefs, is feen correcting the ladies in Bridewel.

Whether Mirs. Blifil had been furfeited with the fweets of marriage, or disgusted by its bitters, or from what other cause it proceeded, I will not determine; but she could never be brought to listen to any second proposals. However, she at last conversed with square with such a degree of intimacy, that malicious tongues began to whisper things of her, to which, as well for the sake of the lady, as that they were highly disagree able to the rule of right, and the stuness of things, we will give no credit, and therefore shall not blot our paper with them. The pedagogue, 'tis certain, whipt on, without getting a step nearer to his journey's end.

Indeed he had committed a great error, and that Square discovered much sooner than himself. Mrs. Bliss (as, perhaps, the reader may have formerly guessed) was not over and above pleased with the below Vol. I.

K haviour

haviour of her husband; nay, to be honest, she abfolutely hated him, till his death, at last, a little reconciled him to her affections. It will not be therefore greatly wondered at, if the had not the most violent regard to the offspring fhe had by him. And, in fact, the had so little of this regard, that in his infancy The feldom faw her fon, or took any notice of him; and hence f he acquiesced, after a little reluctance, in all the favours which Mr. Allworthy showered on the foundling; whom the good man called his own boy, and in all things put on an entire equality with Mafter Blifil. This acquiescence in Mrs. Blifil was confidered by the neighbours, and by the family, as a mark of her condescension to her brother's humour. arid fhe was imagined by all others, as well as Thwackum and Square, to hate the foundling in her heart; nay, the more civility fhe shewed him, the more they conceived fhe detefted him, and the furer schemes fhe was laying for his ruin: for as they thought it her interest to hate him, it was very difficult for her to perfuade them The did not for Algorith a reason blood

Thwackum was the more confirmed in his opinion, as she had more than once shilly caused him to whip Tom Jones, when Mr. Allworthy, who was an enemy to this exercise, was abroad; whereas she had never given any such orders concerning young Bliss. And this had likewise imposed upon Square. In reality, though she certainly hated her own son; of which, however monstrous it appears, I am affured she is not a singular instance, she appeared, notwithstanding all her outward compliance, to be in her heart sufficiently displeased with all the favour shewn by Mr. Allworthy to the soundling. She frequently complained of this behind

behind her brother's back, and very sharply censured him for it, both to Thwackum and Square; nay, she would throw it in the teeth of Allworthy himself, when a little quarrel, or miff, as it is vulgarly called, arose between them.

However, when Tom grew up, and gave tokens of that gallantry of temper which greatly recommends men to women, this difinclination which fhe had discovered to him when a child, by degrees abated, and at last she so evidently demonstrated her affection to him to be much stronger than what she bore her own fon, that it was impossible to mistake her any longer. She was fo defirous of often feeing him, and discovered such satisfaction and delight in his company, that before he was eighteen years old he was become a rival to both Square and Thwackum; and what is worse, the whole country began to talk as loudly of her inclination to Tom, as they had before done of that which she had shewn to Square; on which account the philosopher conceived the most implacable hatred for our poor hero.

ends lib la CHAP. VII.

In which the Author himself makes his appearance on the stage.

THOUGH Mr. Allworthy was not of himself hasty to see things in a disadvantageous light, and was a stranger to the public voice, which seldom reaches to a brother or a husband, though it rings in the ears of all the neighbourhood; yet was this affection of Mrs. Blisil to Tom, and the preference which she too visibly gave him to her own son, of the utmost disadvantage to that youth.

For such was the compassion which inhabited Mr. Allworthy's mind, that nothing but the steel of justice could ever subdue it. To be unfortunate in any respect was sufficient, if there was no demerit to counterpoise it, to turn the scale of that good man's pity, and to engage his friendship, and his benefaction.

When therefore he plainly faw Mafter Blifil was absolutely detested (for that he was) by his own mother, he began, on that account only, to look with an eye of compassion upon him; and what the effects of compassion are in good and benevolent minds, I need

not here explain to most of my readers.

Henceforward, he faw every appearance of virtue in the youth through the magnifying end, and viewed all his faults with the glass inverted, so that they became scarce perceptible. And this perhaps the amiable temper of pity may make commendable; but the next step the weakness of human nature alone must excuse: for he no sooner perceived that preference which Mrs. Blifil gave to Tom, than that poor youth (however innocent) began to fink in his affections as he rose in hers. This, it is true, would of itself alone never have been able to eradicate Jones from his bofom; but it was greatly injurious to him, and prepared Mr. Allworthy's mind for those impressions, which afterwards produced the mighty events that will be contained hereafter in this history; and to which, it must be confest, the unfortunate lad, by his own wantonness, wildness, and want of caution, too much contributed.

In recording some instances of these, we shall, if rightly understood, afford a very useful lesson to those well disposed youths, who shall hereafter be our read-

ers: for they may here find, that goodness of heart, and openness of temper, though these may give them great comfort within, and administer to an honest pride in their own minds, will by no means, alas! do their business in the world. Prudence and circumspection are necessary even to the best of men. They are indeed as it were a guard to virtue, without which The can never be fafe. It is not enough that your defigns, nay that your actions, are intrinfically good, you must take care they shall appear so. If your infide be never so beautiful, you must preserve a fair outfide alfo. This must be constantly looked to, or malice and envy will take care to blacken it so, that the fagacity and goodness of an Allworthy will not be able to fee through it, and to discern the beauties within. Let this, my young readers, be your constant maxim, that no man can be good enough to enable him to neglect the rules of prudence; nor will virtue herfelf look beautiful, unless she be bedecked with the outward ornaments of decency and decorum. And this precept, my worthy disciples, if you read with due attention, you will, I hope, find fufficiently enforced by examples in the following pages.

I ask pardon for this short appearance, by way of chorus, on the stage. It is in reality for my own sake, that while I am discovering the rocks on which innocence and goodness often split, I may not be misunderstood to recommend the very means to my worthy readers, by which I intend to shew them they will be undone. And this, as I could not prevail on any of my actors to speak, I myself was obliged to

declare. I reministed the life of the mosson and rol

· HOMEL

ing his mallers, but much more for his or

mail of the CHAP. VIII.

A childish incident, in which, however, is seen a goodnatured disposition in Tom Jones.

THE reader may remember, that Mr. Allworthy gave Tom Jones a little horse, as a kind of smart-money for the punishment, which he imagined he had suffered innocently.

This horse Tom kept above half a year, and then rode him to a neighbouring fair, and fold him.

At his return, being questioned by Thwackum, what he had done with the money for which the horse was fold, he frankly declared he would not tell him.

'Oho!' fays Thwackum: 'you will not! then I will have it out of your br—h;' that being the place to which he always applied for information on every doubtful occasion.

Tom was now mounted on the back of a footman, and every thing prepared for execution, when Mr. Allworthy entering the room, gave the criminal a reprieve, and took him with him into another apartment; where being alone with Tom, he put the same question to him which Thwackum had before asked him.

Tom answered, he could in duty refuse him nothing; but as for that tyrannical rascal, he would never make him any other answer than with a cudgel, with which he hoped soon to be able to pay him for all his barbarities.

Mr. Allworthy very feverely reprimanded the lad, for his indecent and difrespectful expressions concerning his master; but much more for his avowing an inten-

intention of revenge. He threatened him with the entire loss of his favour, if he ever heard such another word from his mouth; for he said he would never support or befriend a reprobate. By these and the like declarations, he extorted some computation from Tom, in which that youth was not over sincere: for he really meditated some return for all the smarting savours he had received at the hands of the pedagogue. He was, however, brought by Mr. Allworthy to express a concern for his resentment against Thwackum; and then the good man, after some wholesome admonition, permitted him to proceed, which he did, as follows:

' Indeed, my dear Sir, I love and honour you more than all the world: I know the great obligations I have to you, and should detest myself, if I thought my heart was capable of ingratitude. Could the ' little horse you gave me speak, I am sure he could tell you how fond I was of your present: for I had more pleasure in feeding him, than in riding him. ' Indeed, Sir, it went to my heart to part with him; nor would I have fold him upon any other account in the world than what I did. You yourfelf, Sir, I am convinced, in my case, would have done the fame: for none ever fo fenfibly felt the misfortunes of others. What would you feel, dear Sir, if you ' thought yourself the occasion of them? - Indeed, 'Sir, there never was any mifery like theirs.'-'Like whose, child?' fays Allworthy: 'What do 'you mean?' 'Oh, Sir,' answered Tom, 'your ' poor game-keeper, with all his large family, ever fince your discarding him, have been perishing with all the miferies of cold and hunger, I could not K 4

bear to fee these poor wretches naked and starving. and at the same time know myself to have been the

occasion of all their fufferings. - I could not bear it.

' Sir, upon my foul, I could not.' [Here the tears run down his cheeks, and he thus proceeded.] 'It was

. to fave them from absolute destruction, I parted with your dear present, notwithstanding all the value I

had for it -- I fold the horse for them, and they

have every farthing of the money.'

Mr. Allworthy now flood filent for fome moments, and before he spoke, the tears started from his eyes. He at length dismissed Tom with a gentle rebuke, advising him for the future to apply to him in cases of diffress, rather than to use extraordinary means of relieving them himfelf.

This affair was afterwards the subject of much debate between Thwackum and Square. held, that this was flying in Mr. Allworthy's face, who had intended to punish the fellow for his disobedience. He faid, in some instances, what the world called charity appeared to him to be opposing the will of the Almighty, which had marked some particular persons for destruction; and that this was in like manner acting in opposition to Mr. Allworthy; concluding, as usual, with a hearty recommendation of birch.

Square argued firongly, on the other fide, in oppolition perhaps to Thwackum, or in compliance with Mr. Allworthy, who feemed very much to approve what Jones had done. As to what he urged on this occasion, as I am convinced most of my readers will be much abler advocates for poor Jones, it

would

would be impertinent to relate it. Indeed it was not difficult to reconcile to the rule of right, an action which it would have been impossible to deduce from the rule of wrong.

CHAP. IX.

Containing an incident of a more heinous kind, with the comments of Thwackum and Square.

T hath been observed by some man of much greater reputation for wisdom than myself, that missortunes seldom come single. An instance of this may, I believe, be seen in those gentlemen who have the misfortune to have any of their rogueries detected: for here discovery seldom stops till the whole is come out. Thus it happened to poor Tom; who was no fooner pardoned for felling the horse, than he was discovered to have some time before fold a fine bible which Mr. Allworthy gave him, the money arising from which fale he had disposed of in the same manner. This bible Master Blifil had purchased, though he had already fuch another of his own, partly out of respect for the book, and partly out of friendship to Tom, being unwilling that the bible should be fold out of the family at half-price. He therefore difburfed the faid half-price himfelf; for he was a very prudent lad, and fo careful of his money, that he had laid up almost every penny which he had received from Mr. Allworthy.

Some people have been noted to be able to read in no book but their own. On the contrary, from the K 5

time when Master Blifil was first possessed of this bible, he never used any other. Nay, he was seen reading in it much oftener than he had before been in his own. Now, as he frequently asked Thwackum to explain difficult passages to him, that gentleman unfortunately took notice of Tom's name, which was written in many parts of the book. This brought on an enquiry, which obliged Master Blifil to discover the whole matter.

Thwackum was resolved a crime of this kind, which he called sacrilege, should not go unpunished. He therefore proceeded immediately to castigation; and not contented with that, he acquainted Mr. Allworthy, at their next meeting, with this monstrous crime, as it appeared to him; inveighing against Tom in the most bitter terms, and likening him to the buyers and sellers who were driven out of the

temple.

Square faw this matter in a very different light. He faid, he could not perceive any higher crime in felling one book, than in felling another. That to fell bibles was strictly lawful by all laws both divine and human, and confequently there was no unfitness in it. He told Thwackum that his great concern on this occasion brought to his mind the story of a very devout woman, who out of pure regard to religion, stole Tillotson's Sermons from a lady of her acquaintance.

This ftory caused a vast quantity of blood to rush into the parson's face, which of itself was none of the palest; and he was going to reply with great warmth and anger, had not Mrs. Blifil, who was prefent at this debate, interposed. That lady declared

herfelf

herself absolutely of Mr. Square's side. She argued, indeed, very learnedly in support of his opinion; and concluded with saying, if Tom had been guilty of any fault, she must confess her own son appeared to be equally culpable; for that she could see no difference between the buyer and the seller; both of whom were alike to be driven out of the temple.

Mrs. Blifil having declared her opinion, put an end to the debate. Square's triumph would almost have stopt his words, had he needed them; and Thwackum who, for reasons before-mentioned, durst not venture at disobliging the lady, was almost choaked with indignation. As to Mr. Allworthy, he said, since the boy had been already punished, he would not deliver his sentiments on the occasion; and whether he was, or was not angry with the lad, I must leave to the reader's own conjecture.

Soon after this, an action was brought against the game-keeper by 'Squire Western (the gentleman in whose manor the partridge was killed) for depredations of the like kind. This was a most unfortunate circumstance for the fellow, as it not only of itself threatened his ruin, but actually prevented Mr. Allworthy from restoring him to his favour: for as that gentleman was walking out one evening with Master Blissi and young Jones, the latter slilly drew him to the habitation of Black George; where the family of that poor wretch, namely, his wife and children, were found in all the misery with which cold, hunger, and nakedness, can affect human creatures: for as to the money they had received from Jones, former debts had consumed almost the whole.

Such

Such

Such a scene as this could not fail of affecting the heart of Mr. Allworthy. He immediately gave the mother a couple of guineas, with which he bid her cloath her children. The poor woman burst into tears at this goodness, and while she was thanking him, could not refrain from expressing her gratitude to Tom; who had, she said, long preserved both her and hers from starving. 'We have not,' says she,' had a morsel to eat, nor have these poor children had a rag to put on, but what his goodness had be showed on us.' For indeed, besides the horse and the bible, Tom had sacrificed a night gown and other things to the use of this distressed family.

On their return home Tom made use of all his eloquence to display the wretchedness of these people, and the penitence of Black George himsels; and in this he succeeded so well, that Mr. Allworthy said, he thought the man had suffered enough for what was past; that he would forgive him, and think of some means of providing for him and his family.

Jones was fo delighted with this news, that though it was dark when they returned home, he could not help going back a mile, in a fhower of rain, to acquaint the poor woman with the glad tidings; but, like other hasty divulgers of news, he only brought on himself the trouble of contradicting it: for the illsfortune of Black George made use of the very opportunity of his friend's absence to overturn all again.

the money they had received from I much locinger debts

ted confined that for whole.

a suith sin straing CHAP. X and only to swel ods

In which Master Blistl and Jones appear in different lights.

MASTER Blifil fell very fhort of his companion in the amiable quality of mercy; but he as greatly exceeded him in one of a much higher kind, namely, in justice: in which he followed both the precepts and example of Thwackum and Square; for though they would both make frequent use of the word mercy, yet it was plain, that in reality Square held it to be inconsistent with the rule of right; and Thwackum was for doing justice, and leaving mercy to heaven. The two gentlemen did indeed somewhat differ in opinion concerning the objects of this sub-lime virtue; by which Thwackum would probably have destroyed one half of mankind, and Square the other half.

Master Blisil then, though he had kept silence in the presence of Jones, yet when he had better considered the matter, could by no means endure the thoughts of suffering his uncle to confer favours on the undeserving. He therefore resolved immediately to acquaint him with the fact which we have above slightly hinted to the readers. The truth of which was as follows:

The game-keeper about a year after he was dismiffed from Mr. Allworthy's service, and before Tom's selling the horse, being in want of bread, either to fill his own mouth, or those of his family, as he passed through a field belonging to Mr. Western, espied a hare sitting in her form. This hare he had basely and barbarously knocked on the head, against the

the laws of the land, and no less against the laws of

fportfmen.

The higler to whom the hare was fold, being unfortunately taken many months after with a quantity of game upon him, was obliged to make his peace with the 'fquire, by becoming evidence against some poacher. And now Black George was pitched upon by him, as being a person already obnoxious to Mr. Western, and one of no good fame in the country. He was, besides, the best facrifice the higler could make, as he had fupplied him with no game fince; and by this means the witness had an opportunity of screening his better customers: for the 'fquire, being charmed with the power of punishing Black George, whom a fingle transgression was sufficient to ruin, made

no further enquiry.

Had this fact been truly laid before Mr. Allworthy. it might probably have done the game-keeper very little mischief. But there is no zeal blinder than that which is inspired with the love of justice against offenders. Master Blifil had forgot the distance of the time. He varied likewise in the manner of the fact: and, by the hafty addition of the fingle letter S, he confiderably altered the flory; for he faid that George had wired hares. These alterations might probably have been fet right, had not Master Blifil unlackily infifted on a promife of fecrecy from Mr. Allworthy, before he revealed the matter to him; but, by that means, the poor game-keeper was condemned, without having an opportunity to defend himself; for as the fact of killing the hare, and of the action brought, were certainly true, Mr. Allworthy had no doubt concerning the reft. Short-

he

Short-lived then was the joy of these poor people; for Mr. Allworthy the next morning declared he had fresh reason, without assigning it, for his anger, and strictly forbad Tom to mention George any more; though as for his family, he said, he would endeavour to keep them from starving; but as to the sellow himself, he would leave him to the laws, which nothing could keep him from breaking.

Tom could by no means divine what had incensed Mr. Allworthy: for of Master Bliss he had not the least suspicion. However, as his friends hip was to be tired out by no disappointments, he now determined to try another method of preserving the poor game-

keeper from ruin.

Jones was lately grown very intimate with Mr. Western. He had so greatly recommended himself to that gentleman, by leaping over five-barred gates, and by other acts of sportmans hip, that the squire had declared Tom would certainly make a great man, if he had but sufficient encouragement. He often wished he had himself a son with such parts; and one day very solemnly asserted at a drinking bout, that Tom should hunt a pack of hounds for a thousand pounds of his money, with any huntiman in the whole country.

By such kind of ralents he had so ingratiated himfelf with the 'squire, that he was a most welcome guest at his table, and a favourite companion in his sport: every thing which the 'squire held most dear, to wit, his guns, dogs, and horses, were now as much at the command of Jones, as if they had been his own. He resolved therefore to make use of this savour on behalf of his friend Black George, whom he hoped to introduce into Mr. Western's family, in the same capacity in which he had before served Mr. Allworthy.

The reader, if he considers that this fellow was already obnoxious to Mr. Western, and if he considers farther the weighty business by which that gentleman's displeasure had been incurred, will perhaps condemn this as a foolish and desperate undertaking; but if he should totally condemn young Jones on that account, he will greatly applaud him for strengthening himself with all imaginable interest on so arduous an occasion.

For this purpose then Tom applied to Mr. Western's daughter, a young lady of about seventeen years of age, whom her father, next to those necessary implements of sport just before-mentioned, loved and esteemed above all the world. Now, as she had some influence on the 'squire, so Tom had some little influence on her. But this being the intended heroine of this work, a lady with whom we ourselves are greatly in love, and with whom many of our readers will probably be in love too before we part, it is by no means proper she should make her appearance in the end of a book.

graft at his rates and a vine print common in and from a barried from the first of the control o

HISTORY

OF A

FOUNDLING.

BOOK IV.

Containing the time of a year.

CHAP. I.

Containing four pages of paper.

S truth distinguishes our writings from those idle romances which are filled with monsters, the productions, not of nature, but of distempered brains; and which have been therefore recommended by an eminent critic to the sole use of the pastry cook: so, on the other hand, we would avoid any resemblance to that kind of history which a celebrated poet seems to think is no less calculated for the emolument of the brewer, as the reading it should be always attended with a tankard of good ale.

While — history with her comrade ale, Sooths the fad series of her serious tale. For as this is the liquor of modern historians, nay, perhaps their muse, if we may believe the opinion of Butler; who attributes inspiration to ale, it ought likewise to be the potation of their readers, since every book ought to be read with the same spirit, and in the same manner, as it is writ. Thus the samous Author of Hurlothrumbo, told a learned bishop, that the reason his lordship could not taste the excellence of his piece, was, that he did not read it with a siddle in his hand; which instrument he himself had always

had in his own, when he composed it.

That our work, therefore, might be in no danger of being likened to the labours of these historians, we have taken every occasion of interspersing through the whole sundry similies, descriptions, and other kind of poetical embellishments. These are, indeed, designed to supply the place of the said ale, and to refresh the mind, whenever those slumbers which in a long work are apt to invade the reader as well as the writer, shall begin to creep upon him. Without interruptions of this kind, the best narrative of plain matter of sact must over-power every reader; for nothing but the everlasting watchfulness, which Homer has ascribed only to Jove himself, can be proof against a newspaper of many volumes.

We shall leave to the reader to determine with what judgment we have chosen the several occasions for inserting those ornamental parts of our work. Surely it will be allowed that none could be more proper than the present; where we are about to introduce a considerable character on the scene; no less, indeed, than the heroine of this heroic, historical, prosaic poem. Here, therefore, we have thought proper to

prepare

prepare the mind of the reader for her reception, by filling it with every pleafing image, which we can draw from the face of nature. And for this method we plead many precedents. First, this is an art well known to, and much practised by our tragick poets; who seldom fail to prepare their audience for the re-

ception of their principal characters.

Thus the hero is always introduced with a flourish of drums and trumpets, in order to rouse a martial spirit in the audience and to accommodate their ears to bombast and fustian, which Mr. Lock's blind man would not have grossly erred in likening to the sound of a trumpet. Again, when lovers are coming forth, soft music often conducts them on the stage, either to sooth the audience with the softness of the tender passions or to lull and prepare them for that gentle slumber in which they will most probably be composed by the ensuing scene.

And not only the poets, but the masters of these poets, the managers of play-houses, seem to be in this secret; for, besides the aforesaid kettle-drums, &c. which denote the hero's approach, he is generally ushered on the stage by a large troop of half a dozen scene shifters; and how necessary these are imagined to his appearance, may be concluded from the follow-

ing theatrical story.

King Pyrrhus was at dinner at an alehouse bordering on the theatre, when he was summoned to go on the stage. The hero, being unwilling to quit his shoulder of mutton, and as unwilling to draw on himself the indignation of Mr. Wilks, (his brother manager) for making the audience wait, had bribed these his harbingers to be out of the way. While Mr.

L 2

Wilks, therefore, was thundering out: 'Where are 'the carpenters to walk on before king Pyrrhus?' that monarch very quietly eat his mutton, and the audience, however impatient, were obliged to entertain

themselves with music in his absence.

To be plain, I much question whether the politician, who hath generally a good nofe, hat not fcented out somewhat of the utility of this practice. I am convinced that awful magistrate my lord-mayor contracts a good deal of that reverence which attends him thro' the year, by the feveral pageants which precede his pomp. Nay, I must confess, that even I myself, who am not remarkably liable to be captivated with flow, have yielded not a little to the impressions of much preceding state. When I have seen a man strutting in a procession, after others whose business was only to walk before him, I have conceived a higher notion of his dignity, than I have felt on feeing him in a common fituation. But there is one instance which comes exactly up to my purpose. This is the custom of fending on a baffet-woman, who is to precede the pomp at a coronation, and to strew the stage with flowers, before the great personages begin their procession. The ancients would certainly have invoked the goddess Flora for this purpose, and it would have been no difficulty for the priests or politicians to have perfuaded the people of the real presence of the deity, though a plain mortal had personated her, and performed her office. But we have no fuch defign of imposing on our reader; and therefore those who object to the heathen theology, may, if they pleafe, change our goddess into the above-mentioned basketwoman. Our intention, in fhort, is to introduce our heroine

heroine with the utmost solemnity in our power, with an elevation of stile, and all other circumstances proper to raise the veneration of our reader. Indeed we would, for certain causes, advise those of our male readers who have any hearts, to read no farther, were we not well assured, that how amiable soever the picture of our heroine will appear, as it is really a copy from nature, many of our fair country-women will be found worthy to satisfy any passion, and to answer any idea of semale persection, which our pencil will be able to raise.

And now, without any farther preface, we proceed to our next chapter.

CHAP. II.

A short hint of what we can do in the sublime, and a description of Miss Sophia Western,

then ruler of the winds confine in iron chains the boisterous limbs of noify Boreas, and the sharp-pointed nose of bitter, biting Eurus. Do thou, sweet Zephyrus, rising from thy fragrant bed, mount the western sky, and lead on those delicious gales, the charms of which call forth the lovely Flora from her chamber, perfumed with pearly dews, when on the first of June, her birth-day, the blooming maid, in loose attire, gently trips it over the verdant mead, where every flower rises to do her homage, 'till the whole field become enamelled, and colours contend with sweets which shall ravish her most.

Book IV.

So charming may fhe now appear; and you the feather'd chorifters of nature, whose sweetest notes not even Handel can excel, tune your melodious throats, to celebrate her appearance. From love proceeds your music, and to love it returns. Awaken therefore that gentle passion in every swain: for, lo! adorned with all the charms in which nature can array her; bedecked with beauty, youth, sprightliness, innocence, modesty, and tenderness, breathing sweetness from her rosy lips, and darting brightness from her sparkling eyes, the lovely Sophia comes.

Reader, perhaps thou hast seen the statue of the Venus de Medicis. Perhaps too, thou hast seen the gallery of beauties at Hampton-Court. Thou may stremember each bright Churchill of the gallaxy, and all the toasts of the Kit-cat. Or if their reign was before thy times, at least thou hast seen their daughters, the no less dazling beauties of the present age; whose names, should we here insert, we apprehend they

would fill the whole volume.

Now, if thou hast feen all these, be not afraid of the rude answer which lord Rochester once gave to a man, who had seen many things. No. If thou hast seen all these without knowing what beauty is, thou hast no eyes; if without feeling its power, thou hast

no heart.

Yet is it possible, my friend, that thou mayest have seen all these, without being able to form an exact idea of Sophia: for she did not exactly resemble any of them. She was most like the picture of lady Ranelagh; and, I have heard, more still to the samous dutchess of Mazarine; but most of all, she resembled one whose image never can depart from my breast, and

and whom if thou dost remember, thou hast then, my friend, an adequate idea of Sophia.

But lest this should not have been thy fortune, we will endeavour with our utmost skill to describe this paragon, though we are sensible that our highest abi-

lities are very inadequate to the talk.

Sophia then, the only daughter of Mr. Western, was a middle fized woman; but rather inclining to tall. Her shape was not only exact, but extremely delicate: and the nice proportion of her arms promifed the truest fymmetry in her limbs. Her hair, which was black, was fo luxuriant, that it reached her middle, before she cut it to comply with the modern fashion; and it was now curled so gracefully in her neck, that few could believe it to be her own. If envy could find any part of the face which demanded less commendation than the rest, it might possibly think her forehead might have been higher, without prejudice to her. Her eye-brows were full, even, and arched beyond the power of art to imitate. Her black eyes had a lustre in them, which all her softness could not extinguish. Her nose was exactly regular, and her mouth, in which were two rows of ivory, exactly answered Sir John Suckling's description in those lines:

Her lips were red, and one was thin, Compar'd to that was next her chin. Some bee had stung it newly.

Her cheeks were of the oval kind; and in her right fhe had a dimple, which the least finile discovered. Her chin had certainly its share in forming the beauty of her face; but it was difficult to say it was either L 4

large or small, though perhaps it was rather of the former kind. Her complexion had rather more of the lily than of the rose; but when exercise, or modesty, encreased her natural colour, no vermillion could equal it. Then one might indeed cry out with the celebrated Dr. Donne:

Spoke in her cheeks, and so distinctly wrought,
That one might almost say her body thought.

Her neck was long and finely turned: and here, if I was not afraid of offending her delicacy, I might justly say, the highest beauties of the samous Venus de Medicis were outdone; Here was whiteness which no lilies, ivory, nor alabaster could match. The finest cambric might indeed be supposed from envy to cover that bosom, which was much whiter than itself. — It was indeed,

Nitor splendens pario marmore purius.

A gloss shining beyond the purest brightness of Parian marble.

Such was the outfide of Sophia; nor was this beautiful frame difgraced by an inhabitant unworthy of it. Her mind was every way equal to her person; nay, the latter borrowed some charms from the former; for when she smiled, the sweetness of her temper diffused that glory over her countenance, which no regularity of features can give. But as there are no persections of the mind which do not discover themselves, in that persect intimacy, to which we intend to introduce our reader, with this charming young creature; so it is needless to mention them here; nay, it is a kind of tacit affront to our reader's understand-

ing, and may also rob him of that pleasure which he will receive in forming his own judgment of her character.

It may, however, be proper to fay, that whatever mental accomplishments she had derived from nature, they were fomewhat improved and cultivated by art: for fhe had been educated under the care of an aunt, who was a lady of great discretion, and was thoroughly acquainted with the world, having lived in her youth about the court, whence she had retired fome years fince into the country. By her conversation and instructions, Sophia was perfectly well bred, though perhaps fhe wanted a little of that ease in her behaviour, which is to be acquired only by habit, and living within what is called the polite circle. But this, to fay the truth, is often too dearly purchased; and though it hath charms so inexpressible, that the French, perhaps, among other qualities, mean to express this, when they declare they know not what it is; yet its absence is well compensated by innocence; nor can good fense, and a natural gentility, ever stand in need of it.

CHAP. III.

Wherein the history goes back to commemorate a trifling incident that happened some years since; but which, trifling as it was, had some suture consequences.

THE amiable Sophia was now in her eighteenth year, when she is introduced into this history. Her father, as hath been said, was fonder of her than of any other human creature. To her, therefore,

5 Tom

Book IV.

Tom Jones applied, in order to engage her interest on the behalf of his friend the game-keeper.

But before we proceed to this business, a short recapitulation of fome previous matters may be necessary.

Though the different tempers of Mr. Allworthy, and of Mr. Western, did not admit of a very intimate correspondence, yet they lived upon what is called a decent footing together; by which means the young people of both families had been acquainted from their infancy; and as they were all near of the same age. had been frequent play-mates together.

The gaiety of Tom's temper fuited better with Sophia, than the grave and fober disposition of Master Blifil. And the preference which fhe gave the former of these, would often appear so plainly, that a lad of a more passionate turn than Master Blifil was, might

have shewn some displeasure at it.

As he did not, however, outwardly express any fuch difgust, it would be an ill office in us to pay a visit to the inmost recesses of his mind, as some scandalous people fearch into the most fecret affairs of their friends, and often pry into their closets and cupboards, only to discover their poverty and meanness to the world.

However, as persons who suspect they have given others cause of offence, are apt to conclude they are offended; so Sophia imputed an action of Master Blifil to his anger, which the fuperior fagacity of Thwackum and Square discerned to have arisen from a much better principle.

Tom Jones, when very young, had prefented Sophia with a little bird, which he had taken from the

nest, had nursed up, and taught to sing.

Of

Of this bird, Sophia, then about thirteen years old, was so extremely fond, that her chief butiness was to feed and tend it, and her chief pleasure to play with it. By these means little Tommy, for so the bird was called, was become so tame, that it would feed out of the hand of its mistress, would perch upon her finger, and lie contented in her bosom, where it seemed almost sensible of its own happiness; though she always kept a small string about its leg, nor would ever trust it with the liberty of slying away.

One day when Mr. Allworthy and his whole family dined at Mr. Western's, Master Bliss, being in the garden with little Sophia, and observing the extreme fondness that she shewed for her little bird, desired her to trust it for a moment in his hands. Sophia presently complied with the young gentleman's request, and after some previous caution, delivered him her bird; of which he was no sooner in possession, than he slipt the string from its leg, and tossed it into the air.

The foolish animal no sooner perceived itself at liberty, than forgetting all the favours it had received from Sophia, it flew directly from her, and perched

on a bough at some distance.

Sophia, feeing her bird gone, screamed out so loud, that Tom Jones, who was at a little distance, imme-

diately ran to her affiftance.

He was no fooner informed of what had happened, than he curfed Blifil for a pitiful, malicious rafcal, and then immediately stripping off his coat, he applied himself to climbing the tree to which the bird escaped.

Tom had almost recovered his little name-sake, when the branch on which it was perched, and that hung

hung over a canal, broke, and the poor lad plumped

over head and ears into the water.

Sophia's concern now changed its object. And as the apprehended the boy's life was in danger, the fcreamed ten times louder than before; and indeed Mafter Blifil himself now seconded her with all the vociferation in his power.

The company, who were fitting in a room next the garden, were instantly alarmed, and came all forth; but just as they reached the canal, Tom, (for the water was luckily pretty shallow in that part) arrived

fafely on fhore.

Thwackum fell violently on poor Tom, who flood dropping and shivering before him, when Mr. All-worthy defired him to have patience, and turning to Master Blifil, said: pray, child, what is the reason of all this disturbance?

Mafter Blifil answered: 'Indeed, uncle, I am very · forry for what I have done; I have been unhappily the occasion of it all. I had Miss Sophia's bird in ' my hand, and thinking the poor creature languished for liberty, I own, I could not forbear giving it ' what it defired: for I always thought there was fomething very cruel in confining any thing. It ' feemed to be against the law of nature, by which every thing hath a right to liberty; nay, it is even unchristian; for it is not doing what we would be done by: but if I had imagined Miss Sophia would have been so much concerned at it, I am fure I would never have done it; nay, if I had ' known what would have happened to the bird ' itself: for when Master Jones, who climbed up that tree after it, fell into the water, the bird took a

' fecond

' fecond flight, and presently a nasty hawk carried it

'away.'

Poor Sophia, who now first heard of her little Tommy's fate; (for her concern for Jones had prevented her perceiving it when it happened,) shed a shower of tears. These Mr. Allworthy endeavoured to assuage, promising her a much finer bird: but she declared she would never have another. Her father chid her for crying so for a foolish bird; but could not help telling young Bliss, if he was a son of his, his backfide should be well flea'd.

Sophia now returned to her chamber, the two young gentlemen were fent home, and the rest of the company returned to their bottle; where a conversation ensued on the subject of the bird, so curious, that we

think it deserves a chapter by itself.

CHAP. IV.

Containing such very deep and grave matters, that some readers, perhaps, may not relish it.

SQUARE had no fooner lighted his pipe, than addressing himself to Allworthy, he thus began: Sir, I cannot help congratulating you on your nephew; who, at an age when sew lads have any ideas but of sensible objects, is arrived at a capacity of distinguishing right from wrong. To confine any thing seems to me against the law of nature, by which every thing hath a right to liberty. These were his words; and the impression they have made on me is never to be eradicated. Can any man have a higher notion of the rule of right, and the eternal stress of things? I cannot help promising 'myself

myself from such a dawn, that the meridian of this youth will be equal to that of either the elder or

' the younger Brutus.'

Here Thwackum hastily interrupted, and spilling some of his wine, and swallowing the rest with great eagerness, answered: 'From another expression he made use of, I hope he will resemble much better men. The law of nature is a jargon of words, which means nothing. I know not of any such law, nor of any right which can be derived from it. To do as we would be done by, is indeed a christian motive, as the boy well expressed himself, and I am glad to find my instructions have borne such good fruit.'

'If vanity was a thing fit, (fays Square) I might indulge some on the same occasion; for whence only

he can have learnt his notions of right and wrong,

I think is pretty apparent. If there be no law of nature, there is no right nor wrong.

'How! (fays the parson) do you then banish revelation? Am I talking with a deist or an atheist?'

Drink about, (fays Western) pox of your laws of nature. I don't know what you mean either of you, by right and wrong. To take away my girl's bird was wrong in my opinion; and my neighbour Allworthy may do as he pleases; but to encourage boys in such practices is to breed them up to the

gallows.

Allworthy answered: 'That he was forry for what his nephew had done; but could not consent to purinish him, as he acted rather from a generous than unworthy motive.' He said: 'If the boy had stolen the bird, none would have been more ready to vote for

for a severe chastisement than himself; but it was plain that was not his design: and, indeed, it was as apparent to him, that he could have no other view but what he had himself avowed. (For as to that malicious purpose which Sophia suspected, it never once entered into the head of Mr. Allworthy.) He, at length, concluded with again blaming the action as inconsiderate, and which, he said, was pardonable only in a child.

Square had delivered his opinion so openly, that if he was now silent, he must submit to have his judgment censured. He said, therefore, with some warmth: That Mr. Allworthy had too much respect to the dirty consideration of property. That in passing our judgments on great and mighty actions, all private regards should be laid aside; for by adhering to those narrow rules, the younger Brutus had been condemned of ingratitude, and the elder of parricide.'

'And if they had been hanged too for these crimes,' cried Thwackum, 'they would have had no more than their deserts. A couple of heathenish villains! Heaven be praised, we have no Brutus's now-a-days. I wish, Mr. Square, you would desist from filling the minds of my pupils with such antichristian stuff: for the consequence must be, while they are under my care, its being well scourged out of them again. There is your disciple Tom almost spoiled already. I over-heard him the other day disputing with Master Bliss, that there was no merit in faith without works. I know that is one of your tenets, and I suppose he had it from you.'

Book IV.

'Don't accuse me of spoiling him, says Square; 'Who taught him to laugh at whatever is virtuous ant decent, and fit and right in the nature of things?

He is your own scholar, and I disclaim him. No,

ono, Master Blisil is my boy. Young as he is, that lad's notions of moral rectitude, I defy you ever to

' eradicate.'

Thwackum put on a contemptuous fneer at this, and replied: 'Ay, ay, I will venture him with you.' He is too well grounded for all your philosophical cant to hurt. No, no, I have taken care to infil

' fuch principles into him.'-

'And I have inftilled principles into him too,' cries Square. 'What but the fublime idea of virtue could infpire a human mind with the generous thought of giving liberty? And I repeat to you again, if it was a fit thing to be proud, I might claim the honour of

' having infused that idea.'

'And if pride was not forbidden,' faid Thwackum,
'I might boast of having taught him that duty which

' he himself assigned as his motive.'

'So, between you both,' fays the 'squire, 'the 'young gentleman hath been taught to rob my daughter of her bird. I find I must take care of my partridge mew. I shall have some virtuous religious man or other set all my partridges at liberty.' Then slapping a gentleman of the law, who was present, on the back, he cried out: 'What say you to this, Mr. Counsellor? Is not this against law?'

The lawyer with great gravity delivered himfelf as

follows:

'If the case be put of a partridge, there can be no doubt but an action would lie: for though this be 'Feræ

Feræ Naturæ, yet being reclaimed, property vests:
but being the case of a singing bird, though reclaimed, as it is a thing of base nature, it must be
considered as nullius in bonis. In this case, therefore, I conceive the plaintiss must be nonsuited; and
I should disadvise the bringing any such action.

'Well, (fays the squire) if it be nullus bonus, let us drink about, and talk a little of the state of the nation, or some such discourse that we all understand; for I am sure I don't understand a word of this. It may be learning and sense for aught I know; but you shall never persuade me into it. Pox! you have neither of you mentioned a word of that poor lad who deserves to be commended; to venture breaking his neck to oblige my girl, was a generous spirited action: I have learning enough to see that. Den me, here's Tom's health. I shall love the boy for it the longest day I have to live.'

Thus was the debate interrupted; but it would probably have been foon refumed, hat not Mr. All-worthy prefently called for his coach, and carried off

the two combatants.

Such was the conclusion of this adventure of the bird, and of the dialogue occasioned by it, which we could not help recounting to our reader, though it happened some years before that stage, or period of time, at which our history is now arrived.

CHAP. V.

P'test light minds,' was the sentiment of a great master of the passion of love. And certain it is, that Vol. 1.

from this day Sophia began to have some little kindness for Tom Jones, and no little aversion for his

companion.

Many accidents from time to time improved both these passions in her breast; which, without our recounting, the reader may well conclude, from what we have before hinted of the different tempers of these lads, and how much the one suited with her own inclinations more than the other. To say the truth, Sophia, when very young, discerned that Tom, though an idle, thoughtless, rattling rascal, was no-body's enemy but his own; and that Master Bliss, though a prudent, discreet, sober, young gentleman, was, at the same time, strongly attached to the interest only of one single person; and who that single person was, the reader will be able to divine without any assistance of ours.

These two characters are not always received in the world with the different regard which feems feverally due to either; and which one would imagine mankind, from felf-interest, should shew towards them. But perhaps there may be a political reason for it: in finding one of a truly benevolent disposition, men may very reasonably suppose, they have found a treasure, and be desirous of keeping it, like all other good things, to themselves. Hence they may imagine, that to trumper forth the praises of fuch a person, would, in the vulgar phrase, be crying Roast-meat, and calling in partakers of what they intend to apply folely to their own use. If this reason does not satisfy the reader, I know no other means of accounting for the little respect which I have commonly seen paid to a character which really does great honour to human namire, m A

bruta-

nature, and is productive of the highest good to society.
But it was otherwise with Sophia. She honoured Tom
Jones, and scorned Master Blifil, almost as soon as the

knew the meaning of those two words. won

Sophia had been abfent upwards of three years with her aunt; during all which time fhe had feldom feen either of these young gentlemen. She dined however, once, together with her aunty at Mr. All worthy's. This was a few days after the adventure of the partridge, before commemorated, Sonhia heard the whole flory at table, where the faid nothing nor indeed could her aunt ger many words from her as the returned home; but her maid, when undreffing her, happening to fay: Well, Miss, I suppose you have feen young Walter Bliffl to day?' She answered with much paffion: I hate the name of Waster Bliff. as I do whatever is base and treacherous; and I wonder Mr. Allworthy would fuffer that old barbarous fchool-mafter to punish a poor boy to cruelly, for what was only the effect of his good-nature. She then recounted the story to her maid, and concluded with faying: "Don't you think he is a boy of a no fible fpirit?herroon over one or all this and

This young lady was now returned to her fathers who gave her the command of his house, and place her at the upper end of his table, where Tom, (who for his great love of hunting was become a great favourite of the 'squire') often dired. Young men of open, generous dispositions are naturally inclined to gallantry, which if they have good understandings, as was in reality Tom's case, exerts itself in an obliging, complaisant behaviour to all women in general. This greatly distinguished Tom from the boisterous

M 2

-mund

brutality of mere country 'squires on the one hand: and from the folemn, and fomewhat fullen deportment of Walter Blifil on the other; and he began now, at twenty, to have the name of a pretty fellow.

among all the women in the neighbourhood

Tom behaved to Sophia with no particularity, unless, perhaps, by shewing her a higher respect than he paid to any other. This distinction her beauty. fortune, fense, and amiable carriage, feemed to demand; but as to design upon her person he had none; for which we shall at present suffer the reader to condemn him of supidity; but perhaps we shall be able indifferently well to account for it hereafter.

Sophia, with the highest degree of innocence and modesty, had a remarkable sprightliness in her temper. This was to greatly increased whenever the was in company with Tom, that, had he not been very young and thoughtless, he must have observed it; for had not Mr. Western's thoughts been generally either in the field, the stable, or the dog-kennel, it might have, berhaps, created some jealousy in him: but so far was the good gentleman from entertaining any fuch fulpicions, that he gave Tom every opportunity with his daughter which any lover could have withed. And

is Tom innocently improved to better advantage, by following only the dictates of his natural gallantry and good-nature, than he might, perhaps, have done, had he had the deepest designs on the young dady.

But, indeed, it can occasion little wonder, that this matter escaped the observation of others, since poor Sophia herfelf never remarked it, and her heart was itremievably lost before the suspected it was in Alas greatly different head of om from the boingoas

s IVI

Matters

Matters were in this fituation, when Tom one afternoon, finding Sophia alone, began, after a fhort apology, with a very ferious face, to acquaint her, that he had a favour to alk of her, which he hoped her

goodness would comply with.

Though neither the young man's behaviour, nor indeed his manner of opening this business, were such as could give her any just cause of suspecting he intended to make love to her; yet, whether nature whispered something into her ear, or from what cause it arose I will not determine, certain it is, some idea of that kind must have intruded itself; for her colour forsook her cheeks, her limbs trembled, and her tongue would have faultered, had Tom stopped for an answer: but he soon relieved her from her perplexity, by proceeding to inform her of his request, which was to so licit her interest on behalf of the game-keeper, whose own ruin, and that of a large family, must be, he said, the consequence of Mr. Western's pursuing his action against him.

Sophia presently recovered her confusion, and with a smile full of sweetness, said: 'Is this the mighty' favour you asked with so much gravity? I will do it with all my heart. I really pity the poor sellow, and no longer ago than yesterday sent a small matter to his wife.' This small matter was one of her gowns, some linen, and ten shillings in money, of which Tom had heard, and it had, in reality, put this

folicitation into his head.

Our youth, now emboldened with his fucces, refolved to push the matter farther; and ventured even to beg her recommendation of him to her father's service; protesting, that he thought him one of the M 2 honestest honestest fellows in the country, and extremely well qualified for the place of a game-keeper, which lukily

then happened to be vacant.

Sophia answered: 'Well, I will undertake this too; but I cannot promise you as much success as in the former part, which I assure you I will not quit my father without obtaining. However, I will do what I can for the poor fellow; for I sincerely look upon him and his family as objects of great compassion.—And now, Mr. Jones, I must ask you a favour.'—

A favour! Madam, (cries Tom) if you knew the pleasure you have given me in the hopes of receiving a command from you, you would think by mentioning it you did confer the greatest favour on me: for by this dear hand I would facrifice my life

to oblige you.

He then fnatched her hand, and eagerly kiffed it, which was the first time his lips had ever touched her. The blood, which before had forsaken her cheeks, now made her sufficient amends, by rushing all over her face and neck with such violence, that they became all of a scarlet colour. She now first felt a sensation to which she had been before a stranger, and which, when she had leisure to reslect on it, began to acquaint her with some secrets, which the reader, if he does not already guess them, will know in due time.

Sophia, as foon as fhe could speak, (which was not instantly) informed him, that the favour she had to desire of him, was not to lead her father through so many dangers in hunting; for that, from what she had heard, she was terribly frightened every time they went out together, and expected some day or other to see

fee her father brought home with broken limbs. She therefore begged him, for her fake, to be more cautious; and, as he well knew IMr. Western would follow him, not to ride so madly, nor to take those dangerous leaps for the future.

Tom promised faithfully to obey her commands; and, after thanking her for her kind compliance with his request, took his leave, and departed highly

charmed with his fuccess.

Poor Sophia was charmed too; but in a very different way. Her fensations, however, the reader's heart (if he or she have any) will better represent than I can, if I had as many mouths as ever poet wished for, to eat, I suppose, those many dainties with which

he was so plentifully provided.

It was Mr. Western's custom every afternoon, as foon as he was drunk, to hear his daughter play on the harpsichord: for he was a great lover of music, and perhaps, had he lived in town, might have passed for a connoisseur; for he always excepted against the finest compositions of Mr. Handel. He never relished any music but what was light and airy; and indeed his most favourite tunes, were old Sir Simon the King, St. George he was for England, Bobbing Joan, and some others.

His daughter, though fhe was a perfect mistress of music, and would never willingly have played any but Handel's, was so devoted to her father's pleasure, that she learnt all those tunes to oblige him. However, she would now and then endeavour to lead him into her own taste, and when he required the repetition of his ballads, would answer with a 'nay, dear Sir;' and would often beg him to suffer her to play something else.

M 4 This

This evening, however, when the gentleman was retired from his bottle, she played all his favourites three times over, without any folicitation. This fo pleafed the good 'squire, that he started from his couch, gave his daughter a kifs, and fwore her hand was greatly improved. She took this opportunity to execute her promise to Tom, in which she succeeded so well, that the 'fquire declared, if The would give him t'other bout of old Sir Simon, he would give the gamekeeper his deputation the next morning. Sir Simon was played again and again, till the charms of the mulic foothed Mr. Western to sleep. In the morning Sophia did not fail to remind him of his engagement; and his attorney was immediately fent for, and ordered to stop any further proceedings in the action, and to make out the deputation.

Tom's fuccess in this affair soon began to ring over the country, and various were the censures past upon it. Some greatly applauding it as an act of good nature; others sneering, and saying: 'No wonder' that one idle fellow should love another.' Young Bliss was greatly enraged at it. He had long hated Black George in the same proportion as Jones delighted in him; not from any offence which he had ever received, but from his great love to religion and virtue: for Black George had the reputation of a loose kind of a fellow. Bliss therefore represented this as slying in Mr. Allworthy's sace; and declared with great concern, that it was impossible to find any other

motive for doing good to fuch a wretch.

Thwackum and Square likewise sung to the same tune: they were now (especially the latter) become greatly jealous of young Jones with the widow: for he

he now approached the age of twenty, was really a fine young fellow, and that lady, by her encouragements to him, feemed daily more and more to think him fo.

Allworthy was not, however, moved with their malice. He declared himself very well satisfied with what Jones had done. He said, the perseverance and integrity of his friendship was highly commendable, and he wished he could see more frequent instances of that virtue.

But fortune, who feldom greatly relishes such sparks as my friend Tom, perhaps, because they do not pay more ardent addresses to her, gave now a very different turn to all his actions, and shewed them to Mr. Allworthy in a light far less agreeable than that gentleman's goodness had hitherto seen them in.

CHAP. VI.

An apology for the insensibility of Mr. Jones, to all the charms of the lovely Sophia; in which possibly we may, in a considerable degree, lower his character in the estimation of those men of wit and gallantry, who approve the heroes in most of our modern comedies.

THERE are two forts of people, who, I am afraid, have already conceived fome contempt for my hero, on account of his behaviour to Sophia. The former of these will blame his prudence in neglecting an opportunity to possess himself of Mr. Western's fortune; and the latter will no less despise him

M 5

for his backwardness to so fine a girl, who seemed ready to fly into his arms, if he would open them to receive her.

Now, though I shall not, perhaps, be able absolutely to acquit him of either of these charges; (for want of prudence admits of no excuse; and what I shall produce against the latter charge, will, I apprehend, be scarce satisfactory;) yet as evidence may sometimes be offered in mitigation, I shall set forth the plain matter of fact, and leave the whole to the reader's determination.

Mr. Jones had fomewhat about him, which, though I think writers are not thoroughly agreed in its name, doth certainly inhabit fome human breafts; whose use is not so properly to distinguish right from wrong, as to prompt and incite them to the former, and to restrain and with-hold them from the latter.

This fomewhat may be indeed resembled to the famous trunk-maker in the play-house: for whenever the person who is possessed of it, doth what is right, no ravished or friendly spectator is so eager, or so loud in his applause; on the contrary, when he doth wrong, no critic is so apt to his and explode him.

To give a higher idea of the principle I mean, as well as one more familiar to the present age; it may be considered as sitting on its throne in the mind, like the LORD HIGH CHANCELLOR of this kingdom in his court; where it presides, governs, directs, judges, acquits and condemns according to merit and justice; with a knowledge which nothing escapes, a penetration which nothing can deceive, and an integrity which nothing can corrupt.

This

This active principle may perhaps be faid to conflitute the most essential barrier between us, and our neighbours the brutes; for if there be some in the human shape, who are not under any such dominion, I chuse rather to consider them as deserters from us to our neighbours; among whom they will have the sate of deserters, and not be placed in the first rank.

Our hero, whether he derived it from Thwackum or Square I will not determine, was very strongly under the guidance of this principle; for though he did not always act rightly, yet he never did otherwise, without feeling and suffering for it. It was this which taught him, that to repay the civilities and little friendships of hospitality by robbing the house where you have received them, is to be the basest and meanest of thieves. He did not think the baseness of this offence lessened by the height of the injury committed; on the contrary, if to steal another's plate deserved death and infamy, it seemed to him difficult to assign a punishment adequate to the robbing a man of his whole fortune, and of his child into the bargain.

This principle therefore prevented him from any thought of making his fortune by fuch means; (for this, as I have faid, is an active principle, and doth not content itself with knowledge or belief only.) Had he been greatly enamoured of Sophia, he possibly might have thought otherwise; but give me leave to say, there is great difference between running away with a man's daughter from the motive of love, and doing the same thing from the motive of thest.

Now though this young gentleman was not infensible of the charms of Sophia; though he greatly liked her beauty, and esteemed all her other qualifications,

fhe

fhe had made, however, no deep impression on his heart: for which, as it renders him liable to the charge of stupidity, or at least of want of taste, we shall now

proceed to account whom you are now equal narrand

The truth then is, his heart was in the possession of another woman. Here I question not, but the reader will be surprized at our long taciturnity as to this matter; and quite at a loss to divine who this woman was: since we have hitherto not dropt a hint of any one likely to be a rival to Sophia; for as to Mrs. Bliss, though we have been obliged to mention some suspicions of herassection for Tom, we have not hitherto given the least latitude for imagining that he had any for her; and, indeed, I am sorry to say it, but the youth of both sexes are too apt to be deficient in their gratitude, for that regard with which persons more advanced in years are sometimes so kind to honour them.

That the reader may be no longer in suspence, he will be pleased to remember, that we have often mentioned the family of George Seagrim, (commonly called Black George, the Game-keeper) which consisted at present of a wife and five children.

The fecond of these children was a daughter, whose name was Molly, and who was esteemed one of the

handsomest girls in the whole country.

Congreve well fays, there is in true beauty fomething which vulgar fouls cannot admire; fo can no dirt or rags hide this fomething from those souls which are not of the vulgar stamp.

The beauty of this girl made, however, no impreffion on Tom, till fhe grew towards the age of fixteen, when Tom, who was near three years older, began

first

first to cast the eyes of affection upon her. And this affection he had fixed on the girl long before he could bring himself to attempt the possession of her persons for though his constitution urged him greatly to this, his principles no less forcibly restrained him. To debauch a young woman, however low her condition was, appeared to him a very heinous crime; and the good-will he bore the father, with the compassion he had for his family, very strongly corroborated all such sober reslections; so that he once resolved to get the better of his inclinations, and he actually abstanced three whole months without ever going to Seagrim's house, or seeing his daughter.

Now, though Molly was, as we have faid, generally thought a very fine girl, and in reality the was fo, yet her beauty was not of the most amiable kind. It had indeed very little of feminine in it, and would have become a man at least as well as a woman; for, to say the truth, youth and florid health had a very

confiderable flare in the compositions of outdinger

Nor was her mind more effectionate than her person. As this was tall and robust, so was that bold and forward. So little had she of modesty, that Jones had more regard for her virtue than she herself. And as most probably she liked Tom as well as he liked her; so when she perceived his backwardness, she herself grew proportionably forward; and when she saw he had entirely deserted the house, she found means of throwing herself in his way, and behaved in such a manner, that the youth must have had very much, or very little of the hero, if her endeavours had proved unsuccessful. In a word, she soon triumphed over all the virtuous resolutions of Jones: for though

fhe behaved at last with all decent reluctance, yet I rather chuse to attribute the triumph to her; since, in fact, it was her design which succeeded.

In the conduct of this matter, I fay, Molly so well played her part, that Jones attributed the conquest entirely to himself, and considered the young woman as one who had yielded to the violent attacks of his passion. He likewise imputed her yielding to the ungovernable force of her love towards him: and this the reader will allow to have been a very natural and probable supposition, as we have more than once mentioned the uncommon comeliness of his person: and indeed he was one of the handsomest young sellows in the world.

As there are some minds whose affections; like Master Bliss's, are solely placed on one single person, whose interest and indulgence alone they consider on every occasion; regarding the good and ill of all others as merely indifferent, any farther than as they contribute to the pleasure or advantage of that persons so there is a different temper of mind which borrows a degree of virtue even from self-love. Such can never receive any kind of satisfaction from another, without loving the creature to whom that satisfaction is owing, and without making its well-being in some fort necessary to their own ease.

Of this latter species was our hero. He considered this poor girl as one whose happiness or misery he had caused to be dependent on himself. Her beauty was still the object of desire, though greater beauty, or a fresher object, might have been more so; but the little abatement which fruition had occasioned to this, was highly over-balanced by the considerations of the

affection which she visibly bore him, and of the situation into which he had brought her. The former of these created gratitude, the latter compassion; and both together, with his desire for her person, raised in him a passion, which might, without any great violence to the word, be called love; though, perhaps, it was at first not very judiciously placed.

This then was the true reason of that insensibility which he had shewn to the charms of Sophia, and that behaviour in her, which might have been reasonably enough interpreted as an encouragement to his addresses: for as he could not think of abandoning his Molly, poor and destitute as she was, so no more could he entertain a notion of betraying such a creature as Sophia. And surely, had he given the least encouragement to any passion for that young lady, he must have been absolutely guilty of one or other of those crimes; either of which would, in my opinion, have very justly subjected him to that sate, which, at his sirst introduction into this history, I mentioned to have been generally predicted as his certain destiny.

forume, Low HV. A.H. D. res.

Being the Shortest chapter in this book.

HER mother first perceived the alteration in the shape of Molly; and in order to hide it from her neighbours, she foolishly clothed her in that fack which Sophia had sent her. Though indeed that young lady had little apprehension, that the poor woman would have been weak enough to let any of her daughters wear it in that form.

Molly

Molly was charmed with the first opportunity she ever had of shewing her beauty to advantage; for though she could very well bear to contemplate herself in the glass, even when dress in rags; and though she had in that dress conquered the heart of Jones, and perhaps of some others; yet she thought the addition of sinery would much improve her charms, and ex-

tend her conquests, notices and call agreement and

Molly, therefore, having dressed herself out in this sack, with a new laced cap, and some other ornaments which Tom had given her, repairs to church with her fan in her hand the very next Sunday. The great are deceived if they imagine they have appropriated ambition and vanity to themselves. These noble qualities flourish as notably in a country-church, and church-yard, as in the drawing-room, or in the close. Schemes have indeed been laid in the vestry, which would hardly disgrace the conclave. Here is a ministry, and here is an opposition. Here are plots and circumventions, parties and factions, equal to those which are to be found in courts.

Nor are the women here less practised in the highest feminine arts than their fair superiors in quality and fortune. Here are prudes and coquettes. Here are dressing and ogling, falsehood, envy, malice, scandal; in short, every thing which is common to the most splendid assembly, or politest circle. Let those of high life, therefore, no longer despise the ignorance of their inferiors; nor the vulgar any longer rail at the vices of their betters.

Molly had feated herfelf fome time, before fhe was known by her neighbours. And then a whisper ran through the whole congregation: 'Who is she?' but when

when the was discovered, fuch sneering, giggling, tittering, and laughing, enfued among the women. that Mr. Allworthy was obliged to exert his authority to preferve any decency among them.

CHAP. VIII.

A battle fung by the muse in the Homerican file, and which none but the classical reader can tafte.

TR. Western had an estate in this parish; and as IVI his house stood at little greater distance from this church than from his own, he very often came to divine service here; and both he and the charming

Sophia happened to be present at this time.

Sophia was much pleased with the beauty of the girl, whom the pitied for her fimplicity, in having dressed herself in that manner, as she saw the envy which it had occasioned among her equals. She no sooner came home, than she fent for the game-keeper, and ordered him to bring his daughter to her; faying, the would provide for her in the family, and might possibly place the girl about her own person, when her own maid, who was now going away, had left her,

Poor Seagrim was thunderstruck at this; for he was no stranger to the fault in the shape of his daughter. He answered in a stammering voice: 'That he was afraid, Molly would be too aukward to wait on her ladyship, as she had never been at service, 'No matter for that,' fays Sophia: 'The will foon improve. I am pleafed with the girl, and am refolved to try her.

VOL. I.

Black George now repaired to his wife, on whose prudent counsel he depended to extricate him out of this dilemma; but when he came thither, he found his house in some confusion. So great envy had this fack occasioned, that when Mr. Allworthy and the other gentry were gone from church, the rage, which had hitherto been confined, burst into an uproar: and, having vented itself at first in opprobrious words, laughs, hiffes, and gestures, betook itself at last to certain missile weapons; which though, from their plastic nature they threatened neither the loss of life or limb, were however fufficiently dreadful to a well-dreffed lady. Molly had too much spirit to bear this treatment tamely. Having therefore—but hold, as we are diffident of our own abilities, let us here invite a superior power to our affistance.

Ye muses then, whoever ye are, who love to sing battles, and principally thou, who whilom didst recount the slaughter in those fields where Hudibrass and Trulla sought, if thou wert not starved with thy friend Butler, assist me on this great occasion. All

things are not in the power of all.

As a vast herd of cows in a rich farmer's yard, if, while they are milked, they hear their calves at a distance, lamenting the robbery which is then committing, roar and bellow: so roared forth the Somerset-Thire mob an hallaloo, made up of almost as many squawls, screams, and other different sounds, as there were persons, or indeed passions, among them: some were inspired by rage, others alarmed by fear, and others had nothing in their heads but the love of sun; but chiefly Envy, the sister of Satan, and his constant companion, rushed among the crowd, and blew

blew up the fury of the women; who no fooner came up to Molly, than they peked her with dirt and rubbifh.

Molly, having endeavoured in vain to make a handfome retreat, faced about; and laying hold of ragged Bess, who advanced in the front of the enemy, The at one blow felled her to the ground. The whole army of the enemy (though near a hundred in minber) feeing the fare of their general, gave back many paces, and retired behind a new-dug grave; for the church-yard was the field of battle, where there was to be a funeral that very evening. Molly purfued her victory, and catching up a fkull which lay on the fide of the grave, discharged it with such fury, that having hit a taylor on the head, the two fkulls fent equally forth a hollow found at their meeting, and the taylor took presently measure of his length on the ground. where the Ikulls lay fide by fide, and it was doubtful which was the more valuable of the two. Wolly then taking a thigh-bone in her hand, fell in among the flying ranks, and dealing her blows with great liberality on either fide, overthrew the carcals of many a mighty hero and heroine. Betty Centional bar heroing

Recount, O muse, the names of those who sell on this fatal day. First Jemmy Tweedle selt on his hinder head the directal bone. Him the pleasant banks of sweetly winding Stour had nourished, where he first learnt the vocal art, with which, wandring up and down at wakes and fairs, he cheered the rural nymphs and swains, when upon the green they interweav'd the sprightly dance; while he himself stood siddling and jumping to his own music. How little now avails his siddle? He thumps the verdant sloor with

N 2

his carcafe. Next old Echepole, the fow-gelder, received a blow in his forehead from our Amazonian heroine, and immediately fell to the ground. He was a fwinging fat follow, and fell with almost as much noise as a house. His tobacco-box dropt at the fame time from his pocket, which Molly took up as lawful spoils. Then Kate of the mill numbled unfortunately over a combstone, which catching hold of her ungartered flocking, inverted the order of nature, and gave her heels the superiority to her head. Berry Pippin, with young Roger her lover, fell both to the ground, where, O perverse fare! The falutes the earth, and he the fky. Tom Freckle, the fmith's fon, was the next yithim to her rage. He was an ingenious workman, and made excellent pattins; nay the very pattin, with which he was knocked down was his own workmanship. Had he been at that time finging pfalms in the church, he would have avoided a broken head. Miss Crow, the daughter of a farmer; John Giddish, hinsfelf a farmer; Nan Slouch; Either Codling, Will Spray, Tom Benner; the three Misses Potter, whose father keeps the sign of the Red-Lion, Betty Chambermaid, Jack Oftler, and many others of inferior note, lay rolling among the graves. The shoot I want the replace

Not that the strenuous arm of Molly reached all these; for many of them in their slight overthrew

each other.

But now fortune, fearing fhe had afted out of character, and had inclined too long to the same side, especially as it was the right side, hastily turned about; for now goody Brown, — whom Zekiel Brown caressed in his arms; nor he alone, but half the parish besides;

fides; fo famous was the in the fields of Venus, nor indeed less in those of Mars. The trophies of both these her husband always bore about on his head and face; for if ever human head did by its horns display the amorous glories of a wife, Zekiel's did; nor did his well-scratched face less denote her talents (or ra-

ther talons) of a different kind.

No longer bore this Amazon the Shameful flight of her party. She stopt short, and calling aloud to all who fled, spoke as follows: 'Ye Somerset hire men, or rather ye Somerfets hire women, are ye not as hamed thus to fly from a fingle woman? but if no other will oppose her, I myself and Joan Top here will have the honour of the victory. Having thus faid, The flew at Molly Seagrim, and eafily wrenched the thigh-bone from her hand, at the same time clawing off her cap from her head. Then laying hold of the hair of Molly, with her left hand, The attacked her lo furioufly in the face with the right, that the blood foon began to trickle from her note. Molly was not idle this while. She foon removed the clour from the head of goody Brown, and then fastening on her hair with one hand, with the other fhe caused another bloody stream to issue forth from the nostrils of the enemy.

When each of the combatants had borne off fufficient spoils of hair from the head of her antagonist, the next rage was against the garments. In this attack they exerted so much violence, that in a very few minutes, they were both naked to the middle.

It is lucky for the women, that the feat of fiftycuff-war is not the same with them as among men; but though they may seem a little to deviate from their fex, when they go forth to battle, yet I have observed they never so far forget, as to assail the bosoms of each other; where a few blows would be fatal to most of them. This, I know, some derive from their being of a more bloody inclination than the males. On which account they apply to the nose, as to the part whence blood may most easily be drawn; but this seems a far-setched, as well as ill-natured supposition.

Goody Brown had great advantage of Molly in this particular; for the former had indeed no breafts, her bosom (if it may be so called) as well in colour as in many other properties, exactly resembling an ancient piece of parchment, upon which any one might have drummed a considerable while, without doing her

any great damage.

Molly, beside her present unhappy condition, was differently formed in those parts, and might, perhaps, have tempted the envy of Brown to give her a fatal blow, had not the lucky arrival of Tom Jones at this instant put an immediate end to the bloody scene.

This accident was luckily owing to Mr. Square; for he, Master Bliss, and Jones, had mounted their horses, after church, to take the air, and had ridden about a quarter of a mile, when Square, changing his mind, (not idly, but for a reason which we shall unfold as soon as we have leisure) desired the young gentlemen to ride with him another way than they had at first purposed. This motion being complied with, brought them of necessity back again to the church-yard.

Master Blisil, who rode sirst, seeing such a mob assembled, and two women in the posture in which

with

we left the combatants, stopt his horse to enquire. what was the matter. A country fellow, scratching his head, answered him: 'I don't know measter un't I; and please your honour, here hath been a vight, I think, between goody Brown and Moll Seagrim.' Who, who!' cries Tom; but without waiting for an answer, having discovered the features of his Molly through all the discomposure in which they now were, he hastily alighted, turned his horse loose, and leaping over the wall ran to her. She now first bursting into tears, told him how barbaroufly fhe had been Upon which, forgetting the fex of goody Brown, or perhaps not knowing it, in his rage; for, in reality, The had no feminine appearance, but a petticoat, which he might not observe, he gave her a lash or two with his horfe-whip; and then flying at the mob, who were all accused by Moll, he dealt his blows so profusely on all fides, that unless I would again invoke the muse, (which the good-natured reader may think a little too hard upon her, as fhe hath fo lately been violently sweated) it would be impossible for me to recount the horse-whipping of that day.

Having scoured the whole coast of the enemy, as well as any of Homer's heroes ever did, or as Don Quixote, or any knight-errant in the world could have done, he returned to Molly, whom he found in a condition, which must give both me and my reader pain, was it to be described here. Tom raved like a madman, beat his breast, tore his hair, stamped on the ground, and vowed the utmost vengeance on all who had been concerned. He then pulled off his coat, and buttoned it round her, put his hat upon her head, wiped the blood from her face as well as he could

N 4

with his handkerchief, and called out to the fervant to ride as fast as possible for a side-saddle, or a pillion,

that he might carry her fafe home.

Master Bliss objected to the sending away the servant, as they had only one with them; but as Square seconded the order of Jones, he was obliged to comply.

The fervint returned in a very fhort time with the pillion, and Molly, having collected her rags as well as fhe could, was placed behind him. In which manner fhe was carried home, Square, Blifil, and Jones

attending.

Here Jones having received his coat, given her a fly kifs, and whifpered her, that he would return in the evening, quitted his Molly, and rode on after his companions.

CHAP. IX.

Containing matter of no very peaceable colour.

MOLLY had no fooner apparelled herself in her accustomed rags, than her sisters began to fall violently upon her; particularly her eldest sister, who told her she was well-enough served: 'How had she 'the assurance to wear a gown which young Madam 'Western had given to mother! If one of us was 'to wear it, I think,' says she, 'I myself have the 'best right; but I warrant you think it belongs to 'your beauty. I suppose you think yourself more 'handsomer than any of us.' 'Hand her down the 'bit of glass from over the cupboard,' cries another; I'd wash the blood from my face, before I talked of, my beauty.' 'You'd better have minded what the, parson says,' cries the eldest: 'and not a harkened 'after

'after men voke.' 'Indeed, child, and so she had,' says the mother sobbing: 'she hath brought a distinguate upon us all. She's the vurst of the vamily that ever was a whore.' 'You need not upbraid me with that, mother,' cries Molly: 'you yourself was brought-to-bed of fifter there, within a week after you was married.' 'Yes, hussy,' answered the enraged mother, 'so I was, and what was the mighty matter of that? I was made an honest woman then; and if you was to be made an honest woman, I should not be angry; but you must have to doing with a gentleman, you nasty slut; you will have a bastard, hussy, you will; and that I defy any one to say of me.'

In this fituation Black George found his family, when he came home for the purpose before-mentioned. As his wife and three daughters were all of them talking together, and most of them crying, it was some time before he could get an opportunity of being heard; but as soon as such an interval occurred, he acquainted the company with what Sophia had

faid to him.

Goody Seagrim then began to revile her daughter afresh. 'Here,' says she, 'you have brought us into 'a fine quandary indeed. What will Madam say to 'that big belly? Oh that ever I should live to see

" this day!"

Molly answered with great spirit: 'And what is this 'mighty place which you have got for me, father?' (for he had not well understood the phrase used by Sophia of being about her person) 'I suppose it is to be under the cook: but I shan't wash dishes for any body. My gentleman will provide better for N 5 'me.

'me. See what he hath given me this afternoon:
'he hath promifed I shall never want, mother; and
'you shan't want money neither, if you will hold
'your tongue, and know when you are well.' And
so saying, she pulled out several guineas, and gave
her mother one of them.

The good woman no fooner felt the gold within her palm, than her temper began (fuch is the efficacy of that panacea) to be mollified. 'Why, hufband, Tays The, 'would any but fuch a blockhead as you not have enquired what place this was, before he had accepted it? Perhaps, as Molly fays, it may be in the kitchen; and truly I don't care my daughter fhould be a scullion wench: for poor as I am, I am a gentlewoman. And thof I was obliged, as my father, who was a clergyman, died worse than nothing, and fo could not give me a fhilling of portion, to undervalue myself, by marrying a poor man; yet I would have you to know, I have a spirit above all them things. Marry come up! it would better become Madam Western to look at home, and remember who her own grand-father was. Some of my family, for ought I know, might ride in their coaches, when the grand-fathers of some voke walked a voot. I warrant she fancies she did a mighty matter, when fhe fent us that old gownd; fome of my family would not have picked up fuch rags in the street; but poor people are always trampled upon. - The parish need not have been in such a fluster with Molly. — You might have told them, child, your grand-mother wore better things new out of the shop.'

'Well, but confider,' cried George, 'What answer fhall I make to Madam?' 'I don't know what an-

' fwer,' fays The. 'You are always bringing your family into one quandary or other. Do you remember.

ber when you shot the partridge, the occasion of all

our misfortunes? Did not I advise you never to go

' into 'squire Western's manor? Did not I tell you,

many a good year ago, what would come of it? But you would have your own headstrong ways; yes.

' you would, you villain.'—

Black George was, in the main, a peaceable kind of fellow, and nothing choleric, nor rash; yet did he bear about him something of what the ancients called the irascible, and which his wife, if she had been endowed with much wisdom, would have feared. He had long experienced, that when the storm grew very high, arguments were but wind, which served rather to increase than to abate it. He was therefore seldom unprovided with a small switch, a remedy of wonderful force, as he had often essayed, and which the word villain served as a hint for his applying.

No fooner, therefore, had this fymptom appeared, than he had immediate recourse to the faid remedy, which though, as it is usual in all very efficacious medicines, it at first seemed to heighten and inslame the disease, soon produced a total calm, and restored the

patient to perfect ease and tranquillity.

This is, however, a kind of horse-medicine, which requires a very robust constitution to digest, and is therefore proper only for the vulgar, unless in one single instance, viz. where superiority of birth breaks out; in which case, we should not think it very improperly applied by any husband whatever, if the application

plication was not in itself so base, that, like certain applications of the physical kind, which need not be mentioned, it so much degrades and contaminates the hand employed in it, that no gentleman should endure the thought of any thing so low and detestable.

The whole family were foon reduced to a state of perfect quiet; for the virtue of this medicine, like that of electricity, is often communicated through one person to many others, who are not touched by the instrument. To say the truth, as they both operate by friction, it may be doubted whether there is not something analogous between them, of which Mr. Freke would do well to enquire, before he publishes the next edition of his book.

A council was now called, in which, after many debates, Molly still pertisting that the would not go to service, it was at length resolved, that goody Seagrim herself should wait on Miss Western, and endeavour to procure the place for her eldest daughter, who declared great readiness to accept it: but fortune, who seems to have been an enemy of this little family, afterwards put a stop to her promotion.

CHAP. X.

A story told by Mr. Supple, the curate. The penetration of 'squire Western. His great love for his daughter, and the return to it made by her.

THE next morning Tom Jones hunted with Mr. Western, and was at his return invited by that gentleman to dinner.

The

The lovely Sophia shone forth that day with more gaiety and sprightliness than usual. Her battery was certainly levelled at our hero; though, I believe, she herself scarce yet knew her own intention; but if she had any design of charming him, she now sitce ceeded or but the same and the sam

Mr. Supple, the curate of Mr. Allworthy's parifh, made one of the company. He was a good-natured worthy man; but chiefly remarkable for his great taciturnity at table, though his mouth was never that at it. In thore, he had one of the best appetites in the world. However, the cloth was no sooner taken away, than he always made sufficient amends for his filence: for he was a very hearty fellow; and his conversation was often entertaining, never offensive.

At his first arrival, which was immediately before the entrance of the roast-beef, he had given an intimation that he had brought some news with him, and was beginning to tell, that he came that moment from Mr. Allworthy's, when the fight of the roast-beef struck him dumb, permitting him only to say grace, and to declare, he must pay his respect to the baronet; for so he called the firstoin.

When dinner was over, being reminded by Sophia of his news, he began as follows: 'I believe, lady, 'your ladyfhip observed a young woman at church yesterday at even-song, who was drest in one of your outlandish garments; I think I have seen your ladyship in such a one. However, in the country, such dresses are:

Rara avis in terris, nigroque simillima Cygno.
That is, Madam, as much as to fay:

'A rare bird upon the earth, and very like a black

The verse is in Juvenal: but to return to what I was relating; I was faying fuch garments are rare fights in the country; and perchance too hit was thought the more rare, respect being had to the perfon who were it, who, they tell me, is the daughter of Black George, your worfhip's game-keeper, whole fufferings I should have opined, might have taught him more wit than to dress forth his wenches in fuch gaudy apparel. She created fo much confusion in the congregation, that if 'squire Allworthy had not filenced it, it would have interrupted the fervice: for I was once about to stop in the middle of the first lesson, Howbeit, nevertheles, after prayer was over, and I was departed home, this occalioned a battle in the church-yard, where, amongst other mischief, the head of a travelling fiddler was very much broken. This morning the fiddler came to fquire Allworthy for a warrant, and the wench was brought before him. The 'fquire was inclined to have compounded matters; when, lo! on a fudden, the wench appeared (I afk your ladythip's pardon) to be, as it were, at the eve of bringing forth a bastard. The squire demanded of her who was the father? But The pertinaciously refused to make any response. So that he was about to make her mittimus to Bridewel, when I departed."

And is a wench having a bastard all your news, doctor?' cries Western, 'I thought it might have been some public matter, something about the nation.'

'I am afraid it is too common, indeed,' answered the parson, 'but I thought the whole story all to-

gether deferved commemorating. As to national matters, your worship knows them best. My concerns extend no farther than my own parish.

Why, ay, fays the 'fquire: 'I believe I do know a little of that matter, as you fay; but, come, "Tommy, drink about, the bottle stands with you."

Tom begged to be excused, for that he had particular butiness; and getting up from table, escaped the clutches of the 'fquire, who was rifing to ftop him,

and went off with very little ceremony.

The fquire gave him a good curfe at his departure; and then turning to the parson, he cried out: 'I smoke it, I fmoke it. Tom is certainly the veather of this baffard. Zooks, parlon, you remember how he ascommended the veather o'her to me. ___ D_nun, what a fly b-ch'ris. Ay, ay, as fure as two-pence ' Tom is the veather of the baffard.'

'I should be very forry for that,' fays the par-

fon.

'Why forry,' cries the 'squire, 'Where is the mighty matter o't? What, I suppose, dost pretend that thee haft never got a ballard? Pox! more good Luck's thine: for I warrant hast a done therefore many's the good time and often. 'Your worthip is pleased to be jocular, answered the parson: "but ' I do not only animadvert on the finfulness of the 'action, though that furely is to be greatly depre-' cated; but I fear his unrighteousness may injure him with Mr. Allworthy. And truly I must say, though he hath the character of being a little wild, 'I never faw any harm in the young man; nor can I fay I have heard any, fave what your worfhip now mentions. I wish, indeed, he was a little more re-'gular

gular in his responses at church; but altogether he histories, wone working knows them bolk. feems:

Ingenui vultus puer ingenuique pudoris.

That is a classical line, young lady, and being rendered into English is: "A lad of an ingenuous " countenance, and of an ingenuous modelly:" for this was a virtue in great repute both among the Latins and Greeks. I must say the young gentleman (for fo I think I may call him, notwithstanding his birth) appears to me a very modest civil lad. and I should be forry that he should do himself any injury in 'fquire Allworthy's opinion.'

Poogh!' fays the fquire: Injury with Aflworthy! Why Allworthy loves a wench himfelf. Doth not all the country know whose son Tom is? You must talk to another person in that manner. I re-

member Allworthy at college.'

I thought, faid the parson, 'he had never been

at the university.'

Yes, yes, he was, fays the fquire, 'and many a wench have we two had together. As arrant a whoremaster as any within five miles o'un. No, no. It will do'n no harm with he, affure yourfelf; nor with any body elfe. Alk Sophy there — You have not the worle opinion of a young fellow for getting a bastard, have you, girl? No, no, the women will like un the better for't.'

This was a cruel question to poor Sophia. She had observed Tom's colour change at the parson's flory; and that, with his hasty and abrupt departure, gave her fufficient reason to think her father's suspicion not groundless. Her heart now, at once, discovered the

the great secret to her, which it had been so long disclosing by little and little; and she found herself highly interested in this matter. In such a situation, her father's malapert question rushing suddenly upon her, produced some symptoms, which might have alarmed a suspicious heart; but to do the squire justice, that was not his fault. When she rose therefore from her chair, and told him, a hint from him was always susficient to make her withdraw, he suffered her to leave the room, and then with great gravity of countenance remarked: 'That it was better to see a daughter over-modest, than over-forward:' a sentiment which was highly applauded by the parson.

There now enfued between the 'squire and the parfon, a most excellent political discourse, framed out of news-papers, and political pamphlets; in which they made a libation of four bottles of wine to the good of their country; and then, the 'squire being fast asleep, the parson lighted his pipe, mounted his

horse, and rode home.

When the 'squire had finished his half-hour's nap, he fummoned his daughter to her harpfichord; but fhe begged to be excused that evening, on account of This remission was presently a violent head-ach. granted: for indeed fhe feldom had occasion to ask him twice, as he loved her with fuch ardent affection. that by gratifying her, he commonly conveyed the highest gratification to himself. She was really what he frequently called her, his little darling, and the well deserved to be so; for she returned all his affection in the most ample manner. She had preserved the most inviolable duty to him in all things; and this her love made not only easy, but so delightful, that. VOL. I. when

when one of her companions laughed at her, for placing so much merit in such scrupulous obedience, as that young lady called it, Sophia answered: 'You mistake me, Madam, if you think I value myself upon this account: for besides that I am barely discharging my duty, I am likewise pleasing myself. I can truly say, I have no delight equal to that of contributing to my father's happiness; and if I

contributing to my father's happiness; and if I value myself, my dear, it is on having this power.

and not on executing it.'

This was a fatisfaction, however, which poor Sophia was incapable of tafting this evening. She therefore not only defired to be excused from her attendance at the harpsichord, but likewise begged that he would suffer her to absent herself from supper. To this request likewise the 'squire agreed, though not without some reluctance; for he scarce ever permitted her to be out of his sight, unless when he was engaged with his horses, dogs, or bottle. Nevertheless he yielded to the desire of his daughter, though the poor man was, at the same time, obliged to avoid his own company, (if I may so express myself) by sending for a neighbouring farmer to sit with him.

CHAP. XI.

The narrow escape of Molly Seagrim, with some observations, for which we have been forced to dive pretty deep into nature.

TOM JONES had ridden one of Mr. Western's horses that morning in the chace; so that having no horse of his own in the 'squire's stable, he was obliged to go home on foot: this he did so expeditiously,

tiously, that he ran upwards of three miles within the half hour.

Just as he arrived at Mr. Allworthy's outward gare, he met the constable and company, with Molly in their possession, whom they were conducting to that house, where the inferior fort of people may learn one good lesson, viz. respect and deference to their superiors; since it must shew them the wide distinction fortune intends between those persons who are to be corrected for their faults, and those who are not; which lesson, if they do not learn, I am asraid, they very rarely learn any other good lesson, or improve their morals, at the house of correction.

A lawyer may, perhaps, think Mr. Allworthy exceeded his authority a little in this inflance. And, to fay the truth, I question, as here was no regular information before him, whether his conduct was strictly regular. However, as his intention was truly upright, he ought to be excused in Foro Conscientia; since so many arbitrary acts are daily committed by magisfrates, who have not this excuse to plead for

themselves.

Tom was no fooner informed by the constable, whither they were proceeding, (indeed he pretty well guessed it of himself,) than he caught Molly in his arms, and embracing her tenderly before them all, swore he would murder the first man who offered to lay hold of her. He bid her dry her eyes, and be comforted; for wherever she went he would accompany her. Then turning to the constable, who stood trembling with his hat off, he desired him, in a very mild voice, to return with him for a moment only to his father, (so he now called Allworthy) for he durst,

he faid, be affured, that when he had alledged what he had to fay in her favour, the girl would be dif-

charged.

The constable, who, I make no doubt, would have furrendered his prisoner, had Tom demanded her, very readily consented to this request. So back they all went into Mr. Allworthy's hall; where Tom defired them to stay till his return, and then went himself in pursuit of the good man. As soon as he was found, Tom threw himself at his seet, and having begged a patient hearing, confessed himself to be the father of the child, of which Molly was then big. He entreated him to have compassion on the poor girl, and to consider, if there was any guilt in the case, it lay principally at his door.

'If there is any guilt in the case!' answered Allworthy warmly: 'Are you then so profligate and

abandoned a libertine, to doubt whether the breaking the laws of God and man, the corrupting and

ruining a poor girl be guilt? I own, indeed, it doth lie principally upon you, and so heavy it is, that you

ought to expect it should crush you.

Whatever may be my fate,' fays Tom, 'let me fucceed in my intercessions for the poor girl. I confess I have corrupted her; but whether she shall be ruined, depends on you. For Heaven's sake, Sir,

revoke your warrant, and do not fend her to a place which must unavoidably prove her destruction.

Allworthy bid him immediately call a fervant. Tom answered, there was no occasion; for he had luckily met them at the gate, and relying upon his goodness, had brought them all back into his hall, where they now waited his final resolution, which, upon his knees,

a little

he befought him might be in favour of the girl; that the might be permitted to go home to het parents, and not be exposed to a greater degree of shame and scorn than must necessarily fall upon her. 'I know,' faid he, 'that is too much. I know I am the 'wicked occasion of it. I will endeavour to make 'amends, if possible; and if you shall have here after the goodness to forgive me, I hope I shall deferve it.'

Allworthy hesitated some time, and at last said: Well, I will discharge my Mittimus.— You may send the constable to me. He was instantly called,

discharged, and so was the girl.

It will be believed that Mr. Allworthy failed not to read Tom a very severe lecture on this occasion; but it is unnecessary to insert it here, as we have faithfully transcribed, what he said to Jenny Jones in the first book, most of which may be applied to the men, equally with the women. So sensible an effect had these reproofs on the young man, who was no hardened sinner, that he retired to his own room, where he passed the evening alone, in much melancholy contemplation.

Allworthy was fufficiently offended by this tranfgression of Jones; for, notwithstanding the affertions of Mr. Western, it is certain, this worthy man had never indulged himself in any loose pleasures with women, and greatly condemned the vice of incontinence in others. Indeed, there is much reason to imagine, that there was not the least truth in what Mr. Western affirmed, especially as he laid the scene of those impurities at the university, where Mr. Allworthy had never been. In fact, the good 'squire was a little too apt to indulge that kind of pleasantry, which is generally called rhodomontade; but which may, with as much propriety, be expressed by a much shorter word; and, perhaps, we too often supply the use of this little monosyllable by others; since very much of what frequently passes in the world for wit and humour, should, in the strictest purity of language, receive that short appellation, which, in conformity to the well-

bred laws of custom, I here suppress.

But whatever detestation Mr. Allworthy had to this or to any other vice, he was not so blinded by it, but that he could discern any virtue in the guilty person, as clearly, indeed, as if there had been no mixture of vice in the same character. While he was angry therefore, with the incontinence of Jones, he was no less pleased with the honour and honesty of his self-accusation. He began now to form in his mind the same opinion of this young sellow, which, we hope, our reader may have conceived. And in balancing his faults with his persections, the latter seemed rather to preponderate.

It was to no purpose, therefore, that Thwackum, who was immediately charged by Mr. Blisil with the story, unbended all his rancour against poor Tom. Allworthy gave a patient hearing to their invectives, and then answered coldly: 'That young men of Tom's complexion were too generally addicted to this vice; but he believed that youth was sincerely affected with what he had said to him on the occation, and he hoped he would not trangress again.' So that, as the days of whipping were at an end, the tutor had no other vent but his own mouth for his gall, the usual poor resource of impotent revenge.

But

But Square, who was a less violent, was a much more artful man; and as he hated Jones more, perhaps, than Thwackum himself did, so he contrived to do him more mischief in the mind of Mr. Alf-

worthy.

The reader must remember the several little incidents of the partridge, the horse, and the bible, which were recounted in the second book. By all which Jones had rather improved than injured the affection which IMr. Allworthy was inclined to entertain for him. The same, I believe, must have happened to him with every other person who hath any idea of friendship, generosity, and greatness of spirit; that is to say, who

hath any traces of goodness in his mind.

Square himself was not unacquainted with the true impression, which those several instances of goodness had made on the excellent heart of Allworthy; for the philosopher very well knew what virtue was, tho he was not always, perhaps, steady in its pursuit: but as for Thwackum, from what reason I will not determine, no such thoughts ever entered into his head; he saw Jones in a bad light, and he imagined Allworthy saw him in the same, but that he was resolved, from pride and stubbornness of spirit, not to give up the boy whom he had once cherished; since, by so doing, he must tacitly acknowledge, that his former opinion of him had been wrong.

Square therefore embraced this opportunity of injuring Jones in the tenderest part, by giving a very bad turn to all these before-mentioned occurrences. I am forry, Sir,' said he, 'to own I have been deceived as well as yourself. I could not, I confess,

help being pleased with what I ascribed to the mo-

tive of friendship, though it was carried to an excefs, and all excefs is faulty and vicious; but in this I made allowance for youth. Little did I fuspect that the facrifice of truth, which we both imagined to have been made to friendship, was, in reality, a profitution of it to a depraved and debauched appetite. You now plainly fee whence all the feeming generolity of this young man to the family of the game-keeper proceeded. He supported the father, in order to corrupt the daughter, and preserved the family from starving, to bring one of them to shame and ruin. This is friendship! this is generosity! As Sir Richard Steele fays: "Gluttons, who give "high prices for delicacies, are very worthy to be "called generous." In fhort, I am refolved, from this instance, never to give way to the weakness of human nature more, nor to think any thing virtue, which doth not exactly quadrate with the unerring ' rule of right.'

The goodness of Allworthy had prevented those considerations from occurring to himself; yet were they too plausible to be absolutely and hastily rejected, when laid before his eyes by another. Indeed what Square had said sunk very deeply into his mind, and the uneasiness which it there created, was very visible to the other; though the good man would not acknowledge this, but made a very slight answer, and forcibly drove off the discourse to some other subject. It was well, perhaps, for poor Tom, that no such suggestions had been made before he was pardoned; for they certainly stamped in the mind of Allworthy the

first bad impression concerning Jones.

CHAP. XII.

Containing much clearer matters; but which flowed from the same fountain with those in the preceding chapter.

THE reader will be pleased, I believe, to return with me to Sophia. She passed the night, after we saw her last, in no very agreeable manner. Sleep befriended her but little, and dreams less. In the morning, when Mrs. Honour her maid attended her, at the usual hour, she was found already up and drest.

Persons who live two or three miles distance in the country are considered as next door neighbours, and transactions at the one house sty with incredible celerity to the other. Mrs. Honour, therefore had heard the whole story of Molly's shame; which she, being of a very communicative temper, had no sooner entered the apartment of her mistress, than she began to relate in the following manner:

La, Ma'am, what doth your la'ship think? the girl that your la'ship saw at church on Sunday, whom you thought so handsome; though you would not have thought her so handsome neither, if you had seen her nearer; but to be sure she hath been carried before the justice for being big with child. She seemed to me to look like a consident slut; and to be sure she hath laid the child to young Mr. Jones. And all the parish says, Mr. Allworthy is so angry with young Mr. Jones, that he won't see him. To be sure, one can't help pitying the poor young man, and yet he doth not deserve much pity neither, for demeaning himself with such kind of trumpery. Yet he is so pretty a gentleman, I should

be forry to have him turned out of doors. I dares to swear the wench was as willing as he; for she was always a forward kind of body. And when wenches are so coming, young men are not so much to be blamed neither, for to be sure they do no more than what is natural. Indeed it is beneath them to meddle with such dirty draggle-tails; and whatever happens to them, it is good enough for them. And yet to be sure the vile baggages are most in sault. I wishes, with all my heart, they were well to be whipped at the cart's tail; for it is pity they should be the ruin of a pretty young gentleman; and nobody can deny but that Mr. Jones is one of the most handsomest young men that ever—

She was running on thus, when Sophia with a more peevifh voice, than she had ever spoken to her in before, cried: 'Prithee why dost thou trouble me with all 'this stuff? What concern have I in what Mr. Jones 'doth! I suppose you are all alike. And you seem to me to be angry it was not your own case.'

'I, Ma'am!' answered Mrs. Honour, 'I am for'ry your ladyship should have such an opinion of
'me. I am sure no-body can say any such thing of
'me. All the young fellows in the world may go to
'the devil for me. Because I said he was a handsome
'man! Every body says it as well as I.— To be sure,
'I never thought as it was any harm to say a young
'man was handsome; but to be sure I shall never
'think him so any more now; for handsome is that
'handsome does. A beggar wench!'——

'Stop thy torrent of impertinence,' cries Sophia,
'and see whether my father wants me at break'fasts'

Mrs. Honour then flung out of the room muttering much to herfelf,—of which—'Marry come' up, I affure you,' was all that could be plainly diftinguished.

Whether Mrs. Honour really deserved that suspicion, of which her mistress gave her a hint, is a matter which we cannot indulge our reader's curiosity by resolving. We will however make him amends in

disclosing what passed in the mind of Sophia.

The reader will be pleafed to recollect, that a fecret affection for Mr. Jones had intentibly stolen into the bosom of this young lady. That it had there grown to a pretty great height before she herself had discovered it. When she first began to perceive its symptoms, the sensations were so sweet and pleasing, that she had not resolution sufficient to check or repel them; and thus she went on cherishing a passion, of which she never once considered the consequences.

This incident relating to Molly first opened her eyes. She now first perceived the weakness of which she had been guilty; and though it caused the utmost perturbation in her mind, yet it had the effect of other nauseous physic, and for the time expelled her distemper. Its operation indeed was most wonderfully quick; and in the short interval, while her maid was absent, so entirely removed all symptoms, that when Mrs. Honour returned with a summons from her father, she was become perfectly easy, and had brought herself to a thorough indifference for Mr. Jones.

The diseases of the mind do in almost every particular imitate those of the body. For which reason, we hope, that learned faculty, for whom we have so profound a respect, will pardon us the violent hands we have been necessitated to lay on several words and phrases, which of right belong to them, and without which our descriptions must have been often unintel-

ligible.

Now there is no one circumstance in which the differences of the mind bear a more exact analogy to those which are called bodily, than that aptness which both have to a relapse. This is plain, in the violent diseases of ambition and avarice. I have known ambition, when cured at court by frequent disappointments, (which are the only physic for it), to break out again in a contest for foreman of the grand jury at an assizes; and have heard of a man who had so far conquered avarice, as to give away many a six-pence, that comforted himself at last on his death-bed, by making a crafty and advantageous bargain concerning his ensuing funeral, with an undertaker who had married his only child.

In the affair of love, which out of strict conformity with the stoic philosophy, we shall here treat as a disease, this proneness to relapse is no less conspicuous. Thus it happened to poor Sophia; upon whom, the very next time she saw young Jones, all the former symptoms returned, and from that time cold and hot

fits alternately feized her heart.

The fituation of this young lady was now very different from what it had ever been before. That paffion, which had formerly been so exquisitely delicious, became now a scorpion in her bosom. She resisted it therefore with her utmost force, and summoned every argument her reason (which was surprisingly strong for her age) could suggest, to subdue and expel pel it. In this she so far succeeded, that she began to hope from time and absence a perfect cure. She resolved therefore to avoid Tom Jones as much as possible; for which purpose she began to conceive a design of visiting her aunt, to which she made no doubt of obtaining her father's consent.

But fortune, who had other designs in her head, put an immediate stop to any such proceeding, by introducing an accident, which will be related in the

next chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

A dreadful accident which be fel Sophia. The gallant behaviour of Jones, and the more dreadful consequence of that behaviour to the young lady; with a short digression in favour of the semale sex.

M. Western grew every day fonder and fonder of Sophia, infomuch that his beloved dogs themselves almost gave place to her in his affections; but as he could not prevail on himself to abandon these, he contrived very cunningly to enjoy their company, together with that of his daughter, by insisting on her riding a hunting with him.

Sophia, to whom her father's word was a law, readily complied with his defires, though fhe had not the least delight in a sport, which was of too rough and masculine a nature to suit with her disposition. She had, however, another motive, beside her obedience, to accompany the old gentleman in the chace; for by her presence she hoped in some measure to restrain

his

his impetuofity, and to prevent him from fo frequently

exposing his neck to the utmost hazard.

The strongest objection was that which would have formerly been an inducement to her, namely, the frequent meeting with young Jones, whom she had determined to avoid; but as the end of the hunting feason now approached, she hoped, by a short absence with her aunt, to reason herself entirely out of her unfortunate passion; and had not any doubt of being able to meet him in the field the subsequent season

without the least danger.

On the fecond day of her hunting, as fhe was returning from the chace, and was arrived within a little distance from Mr. Western's house, her horse, whose mettlesome spirit required a better rider, fell suddenly to prancing and capering in such a manner, that she was in the most imminent peril of falling. Tom Jones, who was at a little distance behind, saw this, and immediately galloped up to her assistance. As soon as he came up, he leapt from his own horse, and caught hold of her's by the bridle. The unruly beast presently reared himself on end on his hind legs, and threw his lovely burthen from his back, and Jones caught her in his arms.

She was fo affected with the fright, that fhe was not immediately able to fatisfy Jones, who was very folicitous to know whether fhe had received any hurt. She foon after, however, recovered her fpirits, affured him fhe was fafe, and thanked him for the care he had taken of her. Jones answered: 'If I have preserved you, madam, I am sufficiently repaid; for I promise you, I would have secured you from the least harm, at the expence of a much greater

mis-

misfortune to myfelf, than I have fuffered on this occasion.

'What misfortune,' replies Sophia eagerly, 'I

hope you have come to no mischief?'

Be not concerned, madam, answered Jones; Heaven be praised you have escaped so well, consi-

dering the danger you was in. If I have broke my

arm, I consider it as a trifle, in comparison of what

I feared upon your account.'

Sophia then screamed out: 'Broke your arm! hea-

' ven forbid.'

'I am afraid I have, madam,' fays Jones, 'but I beg 'you will fuffer me first to take care of you. I have

a right-hand yet at your fervice, to help you into the next field, whence we have but a very little walk to

vour father's house.'

Sophia feeing his left arm dangling by his fide, while he was ufing the other to lead her, no longer doubted of the truth. She now grew much paler than her fears for herfelf had made her before. All her limbs were feized with a trembling, infomuch that Jones could fcarce support her; and as her thoughts were in no less agitation, she could not refrain from giving Jones a look so full of tenderness, that it almost argued a stronger sensation in her mind, than even gratitude and pity united can raise in the gentlest semale bosom, without the assistance of a third more powerful passion.

Mr. Western, who was advanced at some distance when this accident happened, was now returned, as were the rest of the horsemen. Sophia immediately acquainted them with what had befallen Jones, and begged them to take care of him. Upon which,

Western,

Western, who had been much alarmed by meeting his daughter's horse without its rider, and was now overjoyed to find her unhurt, cried out: 'I am glad 'it is no worse, if Tom hath broken his arm, we will

' get a joiner to mend un again.'

The 'fquire alighted from his horfe, and proceeded to his house on foot, with his daughter and Jones. An impartial spectator, who had met them on the way, would, on viewing their several countenances, have concluded Sophia alone to have been the object of compassion: for as to Jones, he exulted in having probably saved the life of the young lady, at the price only of a broken bone; and Mr. Western, though he was not unconcerned at the accident which had befallen Jones, was, however, delighted in a much higher degree with the fortunate escape

of his daughter.

The generofity of Sophia's temper construed this behaviour of Jones into great bravery; and it made a deep impression on her heart: for certain it is, that there is no one quality which fo generally recommends men to women as this; proceeding, if we believe the common opinion, from that natural timidity of the fex; 'which is,' fays Mr. Ofborne, 'fo great, that ' a woman is the most cowardly of all the creatures 'God ever made.' A fentiment more remarkable for its bluntness than for its truth. Aristotle, in his politics, doth them, I believe, more justice, when he fays: 'The modesty and fortitude of men differ from those virtues in women: for the fortitude which becomes a woman, would be cowardice in a man; ' and the modesty which becomes a man, would be ' pertness in a woman.' Nor is there, perhaps, more

of truth in the opinion of those who derive the partiality which women are inclined to shew to the brave, from this excess of their fear. Mr. Bayle, (I think, in his article of Helen) imputes this, and with greater probability, to their violent love of glory; for the truth of which, we have the authority of him, who, of all others, saw farthest into human nature; and who introduces the heroine of his Odyssey, the great pattern of matrimonial love and constancy, assigning the glory of her husband as the only source of her affection towards him*.

However this be, certain it is that the accident operated very strongly on Sophia; and, indeed, after much enquiry into the matter, I am inclined to believe, that at this very time, the charming Sophia made no less impression on the heart of Jones; to say the truth, he had for some time become sensible of the

irrefiftible power of her charms.

CHAP. XIV.

The arrival of a surgeon. His operations, and a long dialogue between Sophia and her maid.

WHEN they arrived in Mr. Western's hall, Sophia, who had totter'd along with much difficulty, sunk down in a chair; but by the affistance of hartshorn and water, she was prevented from fainting away, and had pretty well recovered her spirits, when the surgeon, who was sent for to Jones,

^{*} The English reader will not find this in the poem, for the sen-

appeared. Mr. Western, who imputed these symptoms in his daughter to her fall, advised her to be presently blooded by way of prevention. In this opinion he was seconded by the surgeon, who gave so many reasons for bleeding, and quoted so many cases where persons had miscarried for want of it, that the squire became very importunate, and indeed insisted peremptorily that his daughter should be blooded.

Sophia foon yielded to the commands of her father, though entirely contrary to her own inclinations: for the fuspected, I believe, less danger from the fright, than either the 'squire or the surgeon. She then stretched out her beautiful arm, and the operator began to prepare for his work.

While the fervants were busied in providing materials, the furgeon, who imputed the backwardness which had appeared in Sophia to her fears, began to comfort her with affurances that there was not the least danger; for no accident, he faid, could ever happen in bleeding, but from the monstrous ignorance of pretenders to furgery, which he pretty plainly infinuated was not at present to be apprehended. Sophia declared fhe was not under the least apprehenfion; adding: if you open an artery, I promife you I'll forgive you. 'Will you?' cries Western, D-n me, if I will; if he does thee the least mifchief, d-n me, if I don't ha' the heart's blood o'un out.' The furgeon affented to bleed her upon these condition, and then proceeded to his operation, which he performed with as much dexterity as he had promised; and with as much quickness: for he took but little blood from her, faying, it was much fafer

to bleed again and again, than to take away too much at once.

Sophia, when her arm was bound up, retired: for the was not willing (nor was it, perhaps, strictly decent) to be present at the operation on Jones. Indeed one objection which the had to bleeding (though the did not make it) was the delay which it would occasion to setting the broken bone. For Western, when Sophia was concerned, had no consideration but for her; and as for Jones himself, he 'fat like' patience on a monument smiling at gries.' To say the truth, when he saw the blood springing from the lovely arm of Sophia, he scarce thought of what had

happened to himfelf.

The furgeon now ordered his patient to be flript to his fhirt, and then entirely baring the arm, he began to firetch and examine it, in fuch a manner, that the tortures he put him to, caused Jones to make several wry faces; which the surgeon observing, greatly wondered at, crying: 'What is the matter, Sir? I am sure it is impossible I should hurt you.' And then holding forth the broken arm, he began a long and very learned lecture of anatomy, in which simple and double fractures were most accurately considered; and the several ways, in which Jones might have broken his arm, were discussed, with proper annotations, shewing how many of these would have been better, and how many worse than the present case.

Having at length finished his laboured harangue, with which the audience, though it had greatly raifed their attention and admiration, were not much edified, as they really understood not a single syllable

Book IV.

of all he had faid, he proceeded to business, which he was more expeditious in finishing, than he had been in beginning.

Jones was then ordered into a bed, which Mr. Western compelled him to accept at his own house, and sentence of water-gruel was passed upon him.

Among the good company which had attended in the hall during the bone-setting, Mrs. Honour was one; who being summoned to her mistress as soon as it was over, and asked by her how the young gentleman did, presently launched into extravagant praises on the magnanimity, as she called it, of his behaviour, which, she said, 'was so charming in so pretty a creature.' She then burst forth into much warmer encomiums on the beauty of his person; enumerating many particulars, and ending with the whiteness of his skin.

This discourse had an effect on Sophia's countenance, which would not perhaps have escaped the observance of the sagacious waiting-woman, had she once looked her mistress in the face, all the time she was speaking; but as a looking-glass, which was most commodiously placed opposite to her, gave her an opportunity of surveying those features, in which, of all others, she took most delight, so she had not once removed her eyes from that amiable object during her whole speech.

Mrs. Honour was so entirely wrapped up in the subject on which she exercised her tongue, and the object before her eyes, that she gave her mistress time to conquer her confusion; which having done, she smiled on her maid, and told her: 'she was certainly in love with this young fellow.' 'I in love,' Ma-

' Madam!' answers she, 'upon my word, Ma'am. I affure you, Ma'am, upon my foul, Ma'am, I am 'not,' 'Why, if you was,' cries her mistress, 'I ' fee no reason that you should be ashamed of it; ' for he is certainly a pretty fellow.' - 'Yes, Ma'am,' answered the other, 'that he is, the most handfomest man I ever saw in my life. Yes, to be fure that he is, and, as your lady thip fays, I don't know why I fhould be afhamed of loving him, though he is my betters. To be fure gentle folks are but flesh and blood no more than us servants. Besides, as for Mr. Jones, thof 'fquire Allworthy hath made a gentleman of him, he was not fo good as myfelf by birth: for thof I am a poor body, I am an honest person's child, and my father and mother were married, which is more than some people can fay, as high as they hold their heads. Marry, come up! I affure you, my dirty coufin! thof his · fkin be fo white, and to be fure, it is the most whitest that ever was seen, I am a christian as well as he, and no body can fay that I am base born; my grand-father was a clergyman*, and would have been very angry, I believe, to have thought any of his family should have taken up with Molly Seagrim's dirty leavings.

Perhaps Sophia might have fuffered her maid to run on in this manner, from wanting fufficient spirits to stop her tongue, which the reader may probably P 3 con-

^{*} This is the fecond person of low condition whom we have recorded in this history, to have sprung from the clergy. It is to be hoped such instances will, in suture ages, when some provision is made for the samilies of the inferior clergy, appear stranger than they can be thought at present.

conjecture was no very eafy talk: for, certainly there were some passages in her speech, which were far from being agreeable to the lady. However, she now checked the torrent, as there seemed no end of its flowing. 'I wonder,' says she, 'at your assure a friends, in daring to talk thus of one of my father's friends. As to the wench, I order you never to mention her name to me. And, with regard to the young gentleman's birth, those who can say nothing more to his disadvantage, may as well be filent on that head, as I desire you will be for the future.'

'I am forry I have offended your ladyfhip,' anfwered Mrs. Honour, 'I am fure I hate Molly Seagrim as much as your ladyship can, and as for abusing fquire Jones, I can call all the servants in the house to witness, that whenever any talk hath been about bastards, I have always taken his part: for which of you, fays I to the footman, would not be a bastard, if he could, to be made a gentleman of? and, fays I, I am fure he is a very fine gentleman; and he hath one of the whitest hands in the world: for to be fure fo he hath; and, ' fays I, one of the fiveetest temperedest, best naturedest men in the world he is; and, says I, all the ' fervants and neighbours all round the country loves him. And to be fure, I could tell your la-' dyship something, but that I am afraid it would offend you. What could you tell me, Honour?' fays Sophia. 'Nay, Ma'am, to be fure he meant nothing by it, therefore I would not have your ladyship be offended.'- 'Prithee tell me,' fays Sophia. - 'I will know it this instant.' 'Why, · Ma'am,

'Ma'am,' answered Mrs. Honout, a he came into the room, one day last week when I was at work, and there lay your lady hip's muff on a chair, and to be fure he put his hands into it, that very must vour ladyfhip gave me but yesterday: La, says I, Mr. Jones, you will stretch my lady's must and fpoil it; but he still kept his hands in it; and then' he kiffed it to be fure, I hardly ever law fuch a kis in my life as he gave it I suppose he' did not know it was mine, replied Sophia. Your ladyfhip fhall hear, Ma'am. He killed it again and again, and faid it was the pretrieft muff in the world La! Sir, fays I, you have feen it a hundred times 'Yes, Mrs. Honour,' cry'd he; but who can fee any thing beautiful in the prefence of your lady but herfelf: nay, that's not all' neither, but I hope your lady hip wont be offendel ed, for to be fure he meant nothing: one day as 'your lady hip was playing on the harplichord to my' mafter, Mr. Jones was fitting in the next room, and me thought he looked melancholy. La! fays I, "Mr. Jones, what's the matter! a penny for your "thoughts, fays L' Why, huffy, fays he, farting up from a dream, what can I be thinking of, when that angel your mistress is playing?" and then' fqueezing me by the hand Oh! Mrs. Honour, fays he, how happy will that man be! and then he fighed; upon my troth, his breath is as fweet' as a nofegay but to be fure he meant no harm by it. So I hope your lady hip will not mention a word: for he gave me a crown never to mention it, and made me fwear upon a book, but I believe, in-"deed, it was not the bible tono! beabal ".mrad " MON Till

Till fomething of a more beautiful red than vermilion be found out, I shall say nothing of Sophia's colour on this occasion. Honour, fays the, 'Ifif you will not mention this any more to me, - nor to any body elfe, I will not betray you I mean, I will not be angry; but I am afraid of your tongue. 'Why, my girl, will you give it fuch liberties?' 'Nay, Majam, answered she, 'to be fure, I would fooner cut out my tongue than offend your lady-' flip-to be fure. I shall never mention a word that your lady hip would not have me. Why, I would not have you mention this any more,' faid Sophia, 'for it may come to my father's ears, and he would be angry with Mr. Jones, though I really believe, as you fay, he meant nothing. I should be 'very angry myfelf if I imagined' 'Nav, Ma'am,' fays Honour, 'I protest I believe he meant nothing. I thought he talked as if he was out of his fenfes; ' nay, he faid he believed he was befide himfelf when he had spoken the words. Ay, Sir, says I, I be-'lieve fo too.' 'Yes,' fays he, 'Honour,'- but I alk your ladyfhip's pardon; I could rearmy tongue out for offending you. Go on faxs Sophia, ' you may mention any thing you have not told me 'Yes, Honour, fays he, (this was fome time afterwards when he gave me the crown) 'I am ' neither fuch a coxcomb, or fuch a villain as to think of her in any other delight, but as my goddess: as ' fuch I will always worfhip and adore her while I ', have breath.' This was all, Ma'am, I will be ' fworn, to the best of my remembrance; I was in a passion with him myself, till I found he meant no ' harm,' 'Indeed, Honour,' fays Sophia, 'I believe you

11

you have a real affection for me; I was provoked the other day when I gave you warning; but if you have a defire to flay with me, you shall." 'To be fure, Ma'am,' answered Mrs. Honour, 'I shall ' never defire to part with your ladyfhip. To be fure I almost cried my eyes out when you gave me warning. It would be very ungrateful in me, to defire to leave your ladyfhip; because as why, I fhould never get fo good a place again. I am fure I would live and die with your ladyship - for, as poor Mr. Jones faid, happy is the man-

Here the dinner-bell interrupted a conversation which had wrought fuch an effect on Sophia, that The was, perhaps, more obliged to her bleeding in the morning, than fhe, at the time, had apprehended fhe fhould be. As to the present situation of her mind, I shall adhere to a rule of Horace, by not attempting to describe it, from despair of success. Most of my readers will fuggest it easily to themselves; and the few who cannot, would not understand the picture, or at least would deny it to be natural, if ever so well drawn.

Jensylvanner there may be no tray in this pre-Mander trook, which was and the scaded lais pleature in one parating than the to which have given and author the greatest pains in compound. Among

while traini elected to neckers ad year to be leading elected which we have arelyed to the followical matter consinclin a ser books and which as lawe determined the anishw to baill sub or valleden alligable of or whicher to be a low state of the state of

41 700

HI SYTOR ORY

testandire to particular voirshad, that To be firsh to a share one gave one warning. It would be very us careful to me, to

be fire. Malant entirered West Mexicing & First

FOUNDLING.

oper IVIL. Jones thid, happyris the man-

er desemble in from actions of these to

Containing a portion of time, somewhat longer than half a year.

set ben graviel a C.H.A.P. al. Cage the restore

Of THE SERIOUS in writing, and for what purpose it is introduced.

Peradventure there may be no parts in this prodigious work, which will give the reader less pleasure in the perusing, than those which have given the author the greatest pains in composing. Among these, probably, may be reckoned those initial essays which we have prefixed to the historical matter contained in every book; and which we have determined to be essentially necessary to this kind of writing, of which we have set ourselves at the head.

THT

For this our determination we do not hold ourselves ftrictly bound to affign any reason; it being abundantly fufficient that we have laid it down as a rule necessary to be observed in all profaic-comic-epic writing. Who ever demanded the reasons of that nice unity of time or place which is now established to be fo effential to dramatic poetry? What critic hath been ever asked, why a play may not contain two days as well as one? Or why the audience (provided they travel, like electors, without any expence) may not be wafted fifty miles as well as five? Hath any commentator well accounted for the limitation which an antient critic hath fet to the drama, which he will have contain neither more nor less than five acts? Or hath any one living attempted to explain, what the modern judges of our theatres mean by that word Low; by which they have happily fucceeded in banishing all humour from the stage, and have made the theatre as dull as a drawing-room? Upon all these occasions, the world seems to have embraced a maxim of our law, viz. cuicunque in arte sua perito credendum est: for it seems, perhaps, difficult to conceive that any one should have had enough of impudence, to lay down dogmatical rules in any art or science without the least foundation. In such cases, therefore, we are apt to conclude, there are found and good reasons at the bottom, though we are unfortunately not able to fee fo far.

Now, in reality, the world have paid too great a compliment to critics, and have imagined them men of much greater profundity than they really are. From this complaifance, the critics have been emboldened to assume a dictatorial power, and have so far suc-

facceeded, that they are now become the mafters, and have the affurance to give laws to those authors, from whose predecessors they originally received them.

The critic, rightly confidered, is no more than the clerk, whose office it is to transcribe the rules and laws laid down by those great judges, whose vast firength of genius hath placed them in the light of legislators, in the several sciences over which they presided. This office was all which the critics of old aspired to, nor did they ever dare to advance a sentence, without supporting it by the authority of the judge from whence it was borrowed.

But in process of time, and in ages of ignorance, the clerk began to invade the power, and affume the dignity of his mafter. The laws of writing were no longer founded on the practice of the author, but on the dictates of the critic. The clerk became the legislator, and those very peremptorily gave laws, whose business it was, at first, only to transcribe them.

Hence arose an obvious, and, perhaps, an unavoidable error: for these critics being men of shallow capacities, very eafily mistook mere form for substance. They acted as a judge would, who should adhere to the lifeless letter of law, and reject the spirit. Little circumstances which were, perhaps, accidental in a great author, were by these critics considered to constitute his chief merit, and transmitted as esfentials to be observed by all his fuccessors. To these encroachments, time and ignorance, the two great supporters of imposture, gave authority; and thus, many rules for good writing have been established, which have not the least foundation in truth or nature; and which commonly ferve for no other purpofe

pose than to curb and restrain genius, in the same manner as it would have restrained the dancing-master, had the many excellent treatises on that art laid it down as an essential rule, that every man must dance in chains.

To avoid, therefore, all imputation of laying down a rule for posterity, founded only on the authority of ipse dixit; for which, to say the truth, we have not the profoundest veneration, we shall here wave the privilege above contended for, and proceed to lay before the reader the reasons which have induced us to intersperse these several digressive essays in the course of this work.

And here we shall of necessity be led to open a new vein of knowledge, which, if it hath been discovered, hath not, to our remembrance, been wrought on by any antient or modern writer. This vein is no other than that of contrast, which runs through all the works of the creation, and may probably have a large share in constituting in us the idea of all beauty, as well natural as artificial: for what demonstrates the beauty and excellence of any thing, but its reverse? Thus the beauty of day, and that of summer, is set off by the horrors of night and winter. And, I believe, if it was possible for a man to have seen only the two former, he would have a very impersect idea of their beauty.

But to avoid too ferious an air: can it be doubted, but that the finest woman in the world would lose all benefit of her charms, in the eye of a man who had never seen one of another cast? The ladies themselves seem so sensible of this, that they are all industrious to procure soils; nay, they will become soils to them-

felves:

felves: for I have observed (at Bath particularly) that they endeavour to appear as ugly as possible in the morning, in order to set off that beauty which they intend to shew you in the evening.

Most artists have this secret in practice, the some, perhaps, have not much studied the theory. The jeweller knows that the finest brilliant requires a soil; and the painter, by the contrast of his figures, often acquires great applause.

A great genius among us will illustrate this matter fully. I cannot, indeed, range him under any general head of common artists, as he hath a title to be placed among those

Inventas qui vitam excoluere per artes.
Who by invented arts have life improv'd.

I mean here the inventor of that most exquisite entertainment, called the English Pantomime.

This entertainment confifted of two parts, which the inventor distinguished by the names of the serious and the comic. The serious exhibited a certain number of heathen gods and heroes, who were certainly the worst and dullest company into which an audience was ever introduced; and (which was a secret known to sew) were actually intended so to be, in order to contrast the comic part of the entertainment, and to display the tricks of harlequin to the better advantage.

This was, perhaps, no very civil use of such personages; but the contrivance was, nevertheless, ingenious enough, and had its effect. And this will now plainly appear, if instead of serious and comic, we supply the words duller and dullest; for the comic was certainly duller than any thing before shewn on the flage, and could be fet off only by that fuperlarive degree of dulness, which composed the serious. So intolerably ferious, indeed, were these gods and heroes, that harlequin (though the English gentleman of that name is not at all related to the French family, for he is of a much more ferious disposition) was always welcome on the stage, as he relieved the audience from worfe company.

Judicious writers have always practifed this art of contrast with great fuccess. I have been furprised that Horace should cavil at this art in Homer; but indeed he contradicts himself in the very next line:

Indignor quandoque bonus dormitat Homerus, Verum opere in longo fas est obrepere fomnum. I grieve if e'er great Homer chance to fleep, Yet flumbers on long works have right to creep.

For we are not here to understand, as, perhaps, some have, that an author actually falls afleep while he is writing. It is true that readers are too apt to be fo overtaken; but if the work was as long as any of Oldmixon, the author himfelf is too well entertained to be subject to the least drowsiness. He is, as Mr. Pope observes:

Sleepless himself to give his readers sleep.

To fay the truth, these soporific parts are so many fcenes of Serious artfully interwoven, in order to contrast and set off the rest; and this is the true meaning of a late facetious writer, who told the public, that whenever he was dull, they might be affired there was a defign in it. William

In this light then, or rather in this darkness, I would have the reader to consider these initial essays. And after this warning, if he shall be of opinion, that he can find enough of serious in other parts of this history, he may pass over these, in which we profess to be laboriously dull, and begin the following books at the second chapter.

CHAP. II.

In which Mr. Jones receives many friendly visits during his confinement; with some fine touches of the passion of love, scarce visible to the naked eye.

TOM JONES had many visitors during his confinement, though some, perhaps, were not very agreeable to him. Mr. Allworthy saw him almost every day; but though he pitied Tom's sufferings, and greatly approved the gallant behaviour which had occasioned them; yet he thought this was a favourable opportunity to bring him to a sober sense of his indiscreet conduct; and that wholesome advice for that purpose could never be applied at a more proper season than at the present; when the mind was softened by pain and sickness, and alarmed by danger; and when its attention was unembarrassed with those turbulent passions, which engage us in the pursuit of pleasure.

At all feafons, therefore, when the good man was alone with the youth, especially when the latter was totally at ease, he took occasion to remind him of his former miscarriages, but in the mildest and tenderest manner, and only in order to introduce the caution.

which

which he prescribed for his future behaviour: 'on which alone,' he assured him, 'would depend his own felicity, and the kindness which he might yet promise himself to receive at the hands of his father by adoption, unless he should hereaster forfeit his good opinion: for as to what had past,' he said, it should be all forgiven and forgotten. He, therefore, advised him to make a good use of this accident, that so in the end it might prove a visitation

for his own good.'

Thwackum was likewife pretty affiduous in his vifits; and he too confidered a fick-bed to be a convenient scene for lectures. His stile, however, was more severe than Mr. Allworthy's: he told his pupil, that he ought to look on his broken limb as a judge ment from heaven on his fins. That it would become him to be daily on his knees, pouring forth thanksgivings that he had broken his arm only, and not his neck; which latter, he faid, 'was very probably referved for fome future occasion, and that, perhaps, not very remote. For his part, he faid, 'he had often wondered some judgment had not overtaken him before; but it might be perceived by this, that divine punishments, though flow, are always fure.' Hence likewise he advised him, 'to foresee, with equal certainty, the greater evils which were yet behind, and which were as fure as this, of overtaking him in his state of re-' probacy. These are,' faid he, 'to be averted only by fuch a thorough and fincere repentance, as is not to be expected or hoped for, from one fo abandoned in his youth, and whose mind, I am afraid, is total-' ly corrupted. It is my duty, however, to exhort VOL. I.

you to this repentance, though I too well know all exhortations will be vain and fruitless. But liberate

vi animam meam. I can accuse my own conscience

of no neglect; though it is at the same time, with

the utmost concern, I see you travelling on to cer-

tain mifery in this world, and to as certain damna-

' tion in the next.'

Square talked in a very different strain; he faid: Such accident, as a broken bone, were below the confideration of a wife man. That it was abundantly sufficient to reconcile the mind to any of these mischances, to reflect that they are liable to befal the wifest of mankind, and are undoubtedly for the good of the whole. He faid: 'it was a mere abuse of words, to call those things evils, in which there was no moral unfitness: than pain, which was the worst consequence of such accidents, was the most contemptible thing in the world; with more of the like fentences, extracted out of the fecond book of Tully's Tusculan questions, and from the great lord Shaftesbury. In pronouncing these he was one day so eager, that he unfortunately bit his tongue; and in fuch a manner, that it not only put an end to his discourse, but created much emotion in him, and caused him to mutter an oath or two: but what was worst of all, this accident gave Thwackum, who was present, and who held all such doctrine to be heathenish and atheistical, an opportunity to clap a judgment on his back. Now this was done with fo malicious a fneer, that it totally unhinged (if I may fo fay) the temper of the philosopher, which the bite of his tongue had fomewhat ruffled; and as he was difabled from venting his wrath at his lips, he had possibly found

found a more violent method of revenging himself, had not the furgeon, who was then luckily in the room, contrary to his own interest, interposed, and

preserved the peace.

Mr. Blifil vifited his friend Jones but feldom, and never alone. This worthy young man, however, professed much regard for him, and as great concern at his misfortune; but cautioufly avoided any intimacy, left, as he frequently hinted, it might contaminate the fobriety of his own character: for which purpose, he had constantly in his mouth that proverb in which Salomon speaks against evil communication. Not that he was fo bitter as Thwackum; for he always expressed some hopes of Tom's reformation: which, he faid, 'the unparallelled goodness shewn by his uncle on this occasion, must certainly effect in one not absolutely abandoned: but concluded, if Mr. Jones ever offends hereafter, I shall not be

' able to fay a fyllable in his favour.'

As to 'fquire Western, he was feldom out of the fick-room; unless when he was engaged either in the field, or over his bottle. Nay, he would sometimes retire hither to take his beer, and it was not without difficulty, that he was prevented from forcing Jones to take his beer too: for no quack ever held his noftrum to be a more general panacea than he did this: which, he faid, had more virtue in it than was in all the physic in an apothecary's-shop. He was however. by much entreaty, prevailed on to forbear the application of this medicine; but from ferenading his patient every hunting morning with the horn under his window, it was impossible to with-hold him; nor did he ever lay aside that hallow, with which he entered into

into all companies, when he vifited Jones, without any regard to the fick person's being at that time either

awake or afleep, the out of the restrict of the

This boisterous behaviour, as it meant no harm, so happily it effected none, and was abundantly compensated to Jones, as soon as he was able to set up, by the company of Sophia, whom the 'squire then brought to visit him: nor was it, indeed, long before Jones was able to attend her to the harpsichord, where she would kindly condescend, for hours together, to charm him with the most delicious music, unless when the 'squire thought proper to interrupt her, by insisting on old Sir Simon, or some other of his favourite pieces.

Notwithstanding the nicest guard which Sophia endeavoured to set on her behaviour, she could not avoid letting some appearances now and then slip forth: for love may again be likened to a disease in this, that when it is denied a vent in one part, it will certainly break out in another. What her lips therefore concealed, her eyes, her blushes, and many little invo-

luntary actions, betrayed.

One day when Sophia was playing on the harpsichord, and Jones was attending, the 'squire came into the room, crying: 'There, Tom, I have had 'a battle for thee below stairs with the thick parson! Thwackum.— He hath been a telling Allworthy, before my face, that the broken bone was a judgment upon thee. D—n it, says I, how can that be? Did not he come by it in defence of a young woman? a judgment indeed! pox, if he never doth any thing worse, he will go to heaven sooner than all the parsons in the country. He hath more reason to 'glory

glory in it, than to be ashamed of it.' Indeed, Sir, fays Jones, 'I have no reason for either; but ' if it preserved Miss Western, I shall always think it the happiest accident of my life.' - 'And to gu,' faid the fquire, 'to zet Allworthy against thee vor it. - D-n'un, if the parson had unt had his petticuoats on, I should have lent un o flick, for I love thee dearly, my boy, and d-n me if there is ' any thing in my power which I won't do for thee. Sha't take thy choice of all the horses in my stable ' to-morrow morning, except only the Chevalier and " Miss Slouch.' Jones thanked him, but declined accepting the offer. - 'Nay, added the 'fquire, fha't ha the forrel mare that Sophy rode. She cost me fifty guineas, and comes fix years old this grass. ' If the had cost me a thousand,' cries Jones passionately, 'I would have given her to the dogs.' ' Pooh! pooh!' answered Western; 'What, because ' fhe broke thy arm. Shouldst forget and forgive. I thought hadft been more a man than to bear ' malice against a dumb creature.' Here Sophia interposed, and put an end to the conversation, by defiring her father's leave to play to him; a request which he never refused.

The countenance of Sophia had undergone more than one change during the foregoing speeches; and probably she imputed the passionate resentment, which Jones had expressed against the mare, to a different motive from that from which her father had derived it. Her spirits were at this time in a visible slutter; and she played so intolerably ill, that had not Wessern soon fallen as leep, he must have remarked it. Jones, however, who was sufficiently awake, and was not with-

Q 3

TELES

out an ear, any more than without eyes, made some observations; which being joined to all which the reader may remember to have passed formerly, gave him pretty strong assurances, when he came to reslect on the whole, that all was not well in the tender bosom of Sophia. An opinion which many young gentlemen will, I doubt not, extremely wonder at his not having been well confirmed in long ago. To confess the truth, he had rather too much diffidence in himself, and was not forward enough in seeing the advances of a young lady; a missortune which can be cured only by that early town education, which is at present so generally in fashion.

When these thoughts had fully taken possession of Jones, they occasioned a perturbation in his mind, which, in a constitution less pure and firm than his, might have been, at such a season, attended with very dangerous consequences. He was truly sensible of the great worth of Sophia. He extremely liked her person, no less admired her accomplishments, and tenderly loved her goodness. In reality, as he had never once entertained any thought of possessing her, nor had ever given the least voluntary induspence to his inclinations, he had a much stronger passion for her than he himself was acquainted with. His heart now brought forth the full secret, at the same time that it assured him the adorable object returned his affection.

er en staat om trade en stad van die kalende of de die 1800 ke

22.3

fection

federal for his and Her. Po H Oad offer her his

Which all who have no heart, will think to contain much ado about nothing.

The reader will perhaps imagine, the fensations which now arole in Jones to have been so sweet and delicious, that they would rather tend to produce a chearful serenity in the mind, than any of those dangerous effects which we have mentioned; but in fact, sensations of this kind, however delicious, are, at their first recognition, of a very tumultuous nature, and have very little of the opiate in them. They were, moreover, in the present case, embittered with certain circumstances, which being mixed with sweeter ingredients, tended altogether to compose a draught that might be termed bitter-sweet; than which, as nothing can be more disagreeable to the palate, so nothing, in the metaphorical sense, can be so injurious to the mind.

For first, though he had sufficient soundation to slatter himself in what he had observed in Sophia, he was not yet free from doubt of misconstruing compassion, or, at best, esteem, into a warmer regard. He was far from a sanguine assurance, that Sophia had any such affection towards him, as might promise his inclinations that harvest, which, if they were encouraged and nursed, they would finally grow up to require. Besides, if he could hope to find no bar to his happiness from the daughter, he thought himself certain of meeting an effectual bar in the father; who, though he was a country squire in his diversions, was perfectly a man of the world in whatever regarded his fortune; had the most violent af-

fection for his only daughter, and had often fignified. in his cups, the pleasure he proposed in seeing her married to one of the richest men in the county. Tones was not fo vain and fenfeless a coxcomb as to expect, from any regard which Western had profesfed for him, that he would ever be induced to lay afide these views of advancing his daughter. He well knew, that fortune is generally the principal, if not the fole confideration, which operates on the best of parents in these matters: for friendship makes us warmly espouse the interest of others; but it is very cold to the gratification of their passions. Indeed, to feel the happiness which may result from this, it is necessary we should possess the passion ourselves. As he had therefore no hopes of obtaining her father's confent; so he thought to endeavour to succeed without it, and by fuch means to fruftrare the great point of Mr. Western's life, was to make a very ill use of his hospitality, and a very ungrateful return to the many little favours received (however roughly) at his hands. If he faw fuch a confequence with horror and difdain, how much more was he shocked with what regarded Mr. Allworthy; to whom, as he had more than filial obligations, so had he for him more than filial piety? He knew the nature of that good man to be so averse to any baseness or treachery, that the least attempt of fuch a kind would make the fight of the guilty person for ever odious to his eyes, and his name a deteftable found in his ears. The appearance of fuch unfurmountable difficulties was fufficient to have inspired him with despair, however ardent his wishes had been; but even these were controuled by compassion for another

ther woman. The idea of lovely Molly now intruded itself before him. He had sworn eternal constancy in her arms, and fhe had as often vowed never to outlive his deferting her. He now faw her in all the most shocking postures of death; nay, he considered all the miseries of prostitution to which she would be liable, and of which he would be doubly the occafion; first by feducing, and then by deferting her; for he well knew the hatred which all her neighhours, and even her own fifters, bore her, and how ready they would all be to tear her to pieces. Indeed he had exposed her to more envy than fhame, or rather to the latter by means of the former: for many women abused her for being a whore, while they envied her her lover and her finery, and would have been themselves glad to have purchased these at the fame rate. The ruin, therefore, of the poor girl must, he foresaw, unavoidably attend his deserting her; and this thought stung him to the foul. Poverty and diftress seemed to him to give none a right of aggravating those misfortunes. The meanness of her condition did not represent her misery as of little consequence in his eyes, nor did it appear to justify, or even to palliate, his guilt, in bringing that mifery upon her. But why do I mention justification? His own heart would not fuffer him to deftroy a human creature, who, he thought loved him, and had to that love facrificed her innocence. His own good heart pleaded her cause; not as a cold venal advocate; but as one interested in the event, and which must itself deeply share in all the agonies its owner brought on another.

When this powerful advocate had fufficiently raifed the pity of Jones, by painting poor Molly in all the circumstances of wretchedness; it artfully called in the assistance of another passion, and represented the girl in all the amiable colours of youth, health, and beauty; as one greatly the object of desire, and much more so, at least to a good mind, from being, at the same time, the object of compassion.

Amidst these thoughts, poor Jones passed a long sleepless night, and in the morning the result of the whole was to abide by Molly, and to think no more

of Sophia, and the baseling and set and have good

In this virtuous resolution he continued all the next day till the evening, cherishing the idea of Molly, and driving Sophia from his thoughts; but in the fatal evening, a very trifling accident set all his passions again on float, and worked so total a change in his mind, that we think it decent to communicate it in a fresh chapter.

CHAP. IV.

A little chapter, in which is contained a little incident.

A MONG other visitants, who paid their compliments to the young gentleman in his confinement, Mrs. Honour was one. The reader, perhaps, when he reflects on some expressions which have formerly dropt from her, may conceive that she herself had a very particular affection for Mr. Jones; but, in reality, it was no such thing. Tom was a hand-some young fellow; and for that species of men Mrs. Honour had some regard; but this was perfectly indiscriminate: for having been crossed in the love which she bore a certain nobleman's sootman, who had

had basely deserted her after a promise of marriage, she had so securely kept together the broken remains of her heart, that no man had ever since been able to possess himself of any single fragment. She viewed all handsome men with that equal regard and benevolence, which a sober and virtuous mind bears to all the good. — She might, indeed, be called a lover of men, as Socrates was a lover of mankind, preferring one to another for corporeal, as he for mental qualifications; but never carrying this preference so far as to cause any perturbation in the philosophi-

cal ferenity of her temper.

The day after Mr. Jones had that conflict with himself, which we have seen in the preceding chapter, Mrs. Honour came into his room, and finding him alone, began in the following manner: 'La, Sir, where do you think I have been? I warrants ' you, you would not guess in fifty years; but if you ' did guess, to be fure, I must not tell you neither.' ' Nay, if it be fomething which you must not tell ' me, faid Jones, 'I shall have the curiofity to en-' quire, and I know you will not be fo barbarous to ' refuse me.' 'I don't know,' cries she, 'why I ' should refuse you neither, for that matter; for to be fure you won't mention it any more. And for that matter, if you knew where I have been, un-' less you knew what I have been about, it would ' not fignify much. Nay, I don't fee why it should be kept a fecret, for my part; for to be fure fhe is ' the best lady in the world.' Upon this, Jones began to beg earnestly to be let into this secret, and faithfully promised not to divulge it. She then proceeded thus: 'Why you must know, Sir, my young

circumstances of wretchedness; it artfully called in the affiftance of another passion, and represented the girl in all the amiable colours of youth, health, and beauty; as one greatly the object of desire, and much more so, at least to a good mind, from being, at the same time, the object of compassion.

Amidst these thoughts, poor Jones passed a long sleepless night, and in the morning the result of the whole was to abide by Molly, and to think no more

of Sophia.

In this virtuous resolution he continued all the next day till the evening, cherishing the idea of Molly, and driving Sophia from his thoughts; but in the fatal evening, a very trifling accident set all his passions again on float, and worked so total a change in his mind, that we think it decent to communicate it in a fresh chapter.

CHAP. IV.

A little chapter, in which is contained a little incident.

A MONG other visitants, who paid their compliments to the young gentleman in his confinement, Mrs. Honour was one. The reader, perhaps, when he reflects on some expressions which have formerly dropt from her, may conceive that she herself had a very particular affection for Mr. Jones; but, in reality, it was no such thing. Tom was a hand-some young fellow; and for that species of men Mrs. Honour had some regard; but this was perfectly indiscriminate: for having been crossed in the love which she bore a certain nobleman's sootman, who

had basely deserted her after a promise of marriage, she had so securely kept together the broken remains of her heart, that no man had ever since been able to possess himself of any single fragment. She viewed all handsome men with that equal regard and benevolence, which a sober and virtuous mind bears to all the good. — She might, indeed, be called a lover of men, as Socrates was a lover of mankind, preferring one to another for corporeal, as he for mental qualifications; but never carrying this preference so far as to cause any perturbation in the philosophical serenity of her temper.

The day after Mr. Jones had that conflict with himself, which we have seen in the preceding chapter, Mrs. Honour came into his room, and finding him alone, began in the following manner: 'La,

'Sir, where do you think I have been? I warrants 'you, you would not guess in fifty years; but if you 'did guess, to be fure, I must not tell you neither.'

'Nay, if it be fomething which you must not tell me, said Jones, 'I shall have the curiosity to enquire, and I know you will not be so barbarous to resuse me.' 'I don't know,' cries she, 'why I

' Should refuse you neither, for that matter; for to be sure you won't mention it any more. And for

that matter, if you knew where I have been, unless you knew what I have been about, it would not fignify much. Nay, I don't see why it should be kept a secret, for my part; for to be sure she is

the best lady in the world.' Upon this, Jones began to beg earnestly to be let into this secret, and faithfully promised not to divulge it. She then proceeded thus: (Why was much beauty Single Proceeded the second secon

ceeded thus: 'Why you must know, Sir, my young

lady fent me to enquire after Molly Seagrim, and to fee whether the wench wanted any thing; to be fure I did not care to go, methinks; but fervants ' must do what they are ordered - How could you undervalue yourfelf fo, Mr. Jones? - So my lady bid me go, and carry her fome linen, and other things.— She is too good. If fuch forward fluts were fent to Bridewell, it would be better for them, I told my lady, fays I, Madam, your la'fhip is encouraging idleness—' And was my Sophia so good?' fays Jones .- 'My Sophia! I affure you, marry come up; answered Honour. And yet if ' you knew all, - indeed, if I was as Mr. Jones, I ' should look a little higher than such trumpery as 'Molly Seagrim.' 'What do you mean by these words,' replied Jones, 'If I knew all?' 'I mean what I mean,' fays Honour. 'Don't you remember putting your hands in my lady's muff once? I vow I could almost find in my heart to tell, if I was certain my lady would never come to the hearing on't.' Jones then made feveral folemn protestations. And Honour proceeded— 'then, to be fure, ' my lady gave me that muff; and afterwards, upon hearing what you had done-' 'Then you told her what I had done!' interrupted Jones. 'If I ' did, Sir,' answered she, 'you need not be angry with me. Many's the man would have given his head to have had my lady told, if they had known for, to be fure, the biggest lord in the land * might be proud-but, I protest, I have a great mind not to tell you.' Jones fell to entreaties, and foon prevailed on her to go on thus. 'You must know then, Sir, that my lady had given this ' muff WORL !

must to me; but about a day or two after I had told her the story, she quarrels with her new must, and to be sure it is the prettiest that ever was seen. Honour, says she,—this is an odious must; it is too big for me—I can't wear it—till I can get another, you must let me have my old one again, and you may have this in the room on't—for she's a good lady, and scorns to give a thing and take a thing, I promise you that. So to be sure I setched it her back again, and, I believe, she hath worn it upon ther arm almost ever since, and I warrants hath given it many a kiss when no body hath seen her.'

Here the conversation was interrupted by Mr. Western himself, who came to summon Jones to the harpsichord; whither the poor young fellow went all pale and trembling. This Western observed, but on seeing Mrs. Honour, imputed it to a wrong cause; and having given Jones a hearty curse between jest and earnest, he bid him bear abroad, and not poach

up the game in his warren.

Sophia looked this evening with more than usual beauty, and we may believe it was no small addition to her charms, in the eye of Mr. Jones, that she now happened to have on her right arm this very must.

She was playing one of her father's favourite tunes, and he was leaning on her chair, when the muff fell over her fingers, and put her out. This so disconcerted the 'squire, that he snatched the muff from her, and with a hearty curse threw it into the fire. Sophia instantly started up, and with the utmost eagerness recovered it from the slames.

Though this incident will probably appear of little confequence to many of our readers; yet, trifling as

it was, it had so violent an effect on poor Jones, that we thought it our duty to relate it. In reality, there are many little circumstances too often omitted by injudicious historians, from which events of the utmost importance arise. The world may indeed be considered as a vast machine, in which the great wheels are originally set in motion by those which are very minute, and almost imperceptible to any but the strongest eyes.

Thus; not all the charms of the incomparable Sophia; not all the dazzling brightness, and languishing softness of her eyes; the harmony of her voice, and of her person; not all her wit, good-humour, greatness of mind, or sweetness of disposition, had been able so absolutely to conquer and enslave the heart of poor Jones, as this little incident of the must. Thus the poet sweetly sings of Troy:

Quos neque Tydides, ne Larissæus Achilles, Non anni domuere decem, non mille Carinæ.

What Diomede, or Thetis' greater fon,
A thousand ships, nor ten years siege had done,
False tears, and fawning words, the city won.

The citadel of Jones was now taken by furprize. All those considerations of honour and prudence, which our hero had lately with so much military wisdom placed as guards over the avenues of his heart, ran away from their posts, and the god of love marched in in triumph.

giving her that joy. V. d. P. d. O inch facered here

A very long chapter, containing a very great incident.

DUT though this victorious deity eafily expelled his avowed enemies from the heart of Jones, he found it more difficult to fupplant the garrison which he himself had placed there. To lay aside all allegory, the concern for what must become of poor Wolly, greatly diffurbed and perplexed the mind of the worthy youth. The fuperior merit of Sophia totally eclipfed. or rather extinguished, all the beauties of the poor girl; but compassion instead of contempt succeeded to love. He was convinced the girl had placed all her affections, and all her prospect of future happiness in him only. For this he had, he knew, given fufficient occasion, by the utmost profusion of tenderness towards her: a tenderness which he had taken every means to perfuade her he would always maintain. She, on her fide, had affured him of her firm belief in his promife, and had with the most folemn vows declared. that on his fulfilling, or breaking these promises, it depended, whether the fhould be the happiest or most miserable of woman kind. And to be the author of this highest degree of misery to a human being, was a thought on which he could not bear to ruminate a fingle moment. He considered this poor girl as having facrificed to him every thing in her little power; as having been at her own expence the object of his pleasure; as fighing and languishing for him even at that very instant. Shall then, fays he, my recovery, for which fhe hath fo ardently wifhed; fhall my prefence, which fhe hath so eagerly expected, instead of giving

Book V

giving her that joy with which she hath flattered herfelf, cast her at once down into misery and despair? Can I be such a villain? Here, when the genius of poor Molly seemed triumphant, the love of Sophia towards him, which now appeared no longer dubious, rushed upon his mind, and bore away every obstacle before it.

At length it occurred to him, that he might possibly be able to make Molly amends another way; namely, by giving her a fum of money. This, nevertheless, he almost despaired of her accepting, when he recollected the frequent and vehement affurances he had received from her, that the world put in balance with him would make her no amends for his loss. However, her extreme poverty, and chiefly her egregious vanity, (fomewhat of which hath been already hinted to the reader,) gave him fome little hope, that notwithflanding all her avowed tenderness, she might in time be brought to content herfelf with a fortune fuperior to her expectation, and which might indulge her vanity, by fetting her above all her equals. He refolved, therefore, to take the first opportunity of making a proposal of this kind.

One day accordingly, when his arm was so well recovered, that he could walk easily with it slung in a sash, he stole forth, at a season when the 'squire was engaged in his field exercises, and visited his fair one. Her mother and sisters, whom he found taking their tea, informed him first that Molly was not at home; but afterwards, the eldest sister acquainted him with a malicious smile, that she was above stairs a-bed. Tom had no objection to this situation of his mistress, and immediately ascended the ladder which led towards

courfe

her bed-chamber; but when he came to the top, he, to his great furprize, found the door fast; nor could he for some time obtain any answer from within; for Molly, as fhe herfelf afterwards informed him, was

fast asleep.

The extremes of grief and joy have been remarkable to produce very fimular effects; and when either of these rushes on us by surprize, it is apt to create fuch a total perturbation and confusion, that we are often thereby deprived of the use of all our faculties. It cannot therefore be wondered at, that the unexpected fight of Mr. Jones should so strongly operate on the mind of Molly, and fhould overwhelm her with fuch confusion, that for some minutes she was unable to express the great raptures, with which the reader will suppose the was affected on this occasion. As for Jones, he was fo entirely possessed, and as it were enchanted by the presence of his beloved object, that he for a while forgot Sophia, and confequently the principal purpose of his visit.

This, however, foon recurred to his memory! and after the first transports of their meeting were over, he found means by degrees to introduce a difcourse on the fatal consequences which must attend their amour, if Mr. Allworthy, who had ffrictly forbidden him ever feeing her more, should discover that he still carried on this commerce. Such a difcovery, which his enemies gave him reason to think would be unavoidable, must, he said, end in his ruin. and confequently in hers. Since therefore, their hard fates had determined that they must separate, he advised her to bear it with resolution, and swore he would never omit any opportunity through the Vol. I.

course of his life, of shewing her the sincerity of his affection, by providing for her in a manner beyond her utmost expectation, or even beyond her wishes, if ever that should be in his power; concluding at last, that she might soon find some man who would marry her, and who would make her much happier than she could be by leading a disreputable life with him.

Molly remained a few moments in filence, and then burfting into a flood of tears, the began to upbraid him in the following words: 'And this is your' love for me, to forfake me in this manner, now you have ruined me? How often, when I have told you that, all men are false and perjury alike, and grow tired of us as foon as ever they have had their wicked wills of us, how often have you sworn you would never forfake me? And can you be such a perjury man after all? What signifies all the riches in the world to me without you, now you have gained my heart, so you have—you have—? Why do you mention another man to me? I can never love any other man as long as I live. All

other men are nothing to me. If the greatest squire in all the country would come a suiting to me to

morrow, I would not give my company to him.
No, I shall always hate and despife the whole sex

for your fake.

She was proceeding thus, when an accident put a stop to her tongue, before it had run out half its career. The room, or rather garret, in which Molly lay, being up one pair of stairs, that is to say, at the top of the house, was of a sloping sigure, resembling the great Delta of the Greeks. The English reader may, perhaps, from a better idea of it, by being told,

told, that it was impossible to stand upright any where but in the middle. Now, as this room wanted the conveniency of a closet, Molly had, to supply that defect, nailed up an old rug against the rafters of the house, which enclosed a little hole where her best apparel, such as the remains of that sack which we have formerly mentioned, some caps, and other things with which she had lately provided herself, were hung up and secured from the dust.

The posture, indeed, in which he stood, was not greatly unlike that of a soldier who is tied neck and heels; or rather resembling the attitude in which we often see fellows in the public streets of London, who are not suffering but deserving punishment by so standing. He had a night-cap belonging to Molly on his head, and his two large eyes the moment the rug fell, stared directly at Jones; so that when the idea of philosophy was added to the figure now disco-

R 2 vered,

vered, it would have been very difficult for any spectator to have refrained from immoderate laughter.

I question not but the surprize of the reader will be here equal to that of Jones; as the suspicions which must arise from the appearance of this wise and grave man in such a place, may seem so inconsistent with that character, which he hath, doubtless, main-

tained hitherto, in the opinion of every one.

But to confess the truth, this inconsistency is rather imaginary than real. Philosophers are composed of flesh and blood as well as other human creatures; and however fublimated and refined the theory of these may be, a little practical frailty is as incident to them as to other mortals. It is indeed in theory only and not in practice, as we have before hinted, that confifts the difference: for though fuch great beings think much better and more wifely, they always act exactly like other men. They know very well how to fubdue all appetites and passions, and to despile both pain and pleasure; and this knowledge affords much delightful contemplation, and is eafily acquired: but the practice would be vexatious and troublesome; and, therefore, the same wisdom which teaches them to know this, teaches them to avoid carrying it into execution. I and its districts

Mr. Square happened to be at church, on that Sunday, when as the reader may be pleafed to remember, the appearance of Molly in her fack had caufed all that diffurbance. Here he first observed her, and was so pleafed with her beauty, that he prevailed with the young gentlemen to change their intended ride that evening, that he might pass by the habitation of Molly, and, by that means, might obtain a second

fecond chance of feeing her. This reason, however, as he did not at that time mention to any, so neither did we think proper to communicate it then to the reader.

Among other particulars which constituted the unfitness of things in Mr. Square's opinion, danger and difficulty were two. The difficulty, therefore, which he apprehended there might be in corrupting this young wench, and the danger which would accrue to his character on the discovery, were such strong dissuasives, that it is probable, he at first intended to have contented himself with the pleasing ideas which the sight of beauty furnishes us with. These the gravest men, after a full meal of serious meditation, often allow themselves by way of desert: for which purpose, certain books and pictures find their way into the most private recesses of their study, and a certain liquorish part of natural philosophy is often the principal subject of their conversation.

But when the philosopher heard a day or two afterwards, that the fortress of virtue had already been subdued, he began to give a larger scope to his defires. His appetite was not of that squeamish kind which cannot feed on a dainty because another hath tasted it. In short, he liked the girl the better for the want of that chastity, which, if she had possessed it, must have been a bar to his pleasures; he pursued,

and obtained her.

The reader will be mistaken, if he thinks Molly gave Square the preference to her younger lover: on the contrary, had she been confined to the choice of one only, Tom Jones would, undoubtedly, have been, of the two, the victorious person. Nor was it folely R 2

the consideration that two are better than one (tho this had its proper weight) to which Mr. Square owed his success; the absence of Jones during his confinement was an unlucky circumstance; and in that interval, some well chosen presents from the philosopher so softened and unguared the girl's heart, that a favourable opportunity became irresistable, and Square triumphed over the poor remains of virtue which sub-

fifted in the bosom of Molly.

It was now about a fortnight fince this conquest, when Jones paid the above-mentioned vifit to his mistress, at a time when she and Square were in bed This was the true reason why the mother together. denied her, as we have feen; for as the old woman Shared in the profits ariling from the iniquity of her daughter, fhe encouraged and protected her in it to the utmost of her power; but such was the envy and hatred which the eldest fifter bore towards Molly, that notwithstanding she had some part of the booty, she would willingly have parted with this to ruin her fifter and spoil her trade. Hence she had acquainted Jones with her being above stairs in bed, in hopes that he might have caught her in Square's arms. This, however, Molly found means to prevent, as the door was fastened; which gave her an opportunity of conveying her lover behind that rug or blanket where he now was unhappily discovered.

Square no fooner made his appearance than Molly flung herself back in her bed, cried out she was undone, and abandoned herself to despair. This poor girl, who was yet but a novice in her business, had not arrived to that perfection of affurance which helps off a town lady in any extremity; and either prompts

prompts her with an excuse, or else inspires her to brazen out the matter with her husband; who from love of quiet, or out of fear of his reputation, and sometimes, perhaps, from sear of the gallant, who, like one Mr. Constant in the play, wears a sword, is glad to shut his eyes, and contented to put his horns in his pocket. Molly, on the contrary, was silenced by this evidence, and very fairly gave up a cause which she had hitherto maintained with so many tears, and with such solemn and vehement protestations of the purest love and constancy.

As to the gentleman behind the arras, he was not in much less consternation. He stood for a while motionless, and seemed equally at a loss what to say, or whither to direct his eyes. Jones, though perhaps the most associated of the three, first found his tongue, and being immediately recovered from those uneasy sensations, which Molly by her upbraidings had occasioned, he burst into a loud laughter, and then saluting Mr. Square, advanced to take him by the hand, and to relieve him from his place of consine-

ment.

Square, being now arrived in the middle of the room, in which part only he could stand upright, looked at Jones with a very grave countenance, and said to him: 'Well, Sir, I see you enjoy this mighty discovery, and, I dare swear, taste great delight in the thoughts of exposing me; but if you will consider the matter fairly, you will find you are yourself only to blame. I am not guilty of corrupting innocence. I have done nothing for which that part of the world which judges of matters by the rule of right, will condemn me. Fitness is go-

verned by the nature of things, and not by cuftoms, forms, or municipal laws. Nothing is indeed unfit, which is not unnatural.' Well reasoned. 'old boy,' answered Jones; 'but why dost thou think that I should defire to expose thee? I promise thee, I was never better pleased with thee in my life; and unless thou hast a mind to discover it thyfelf, this affair may remain a profound fecret for ' me.' 'Nay, Mr. Jones,' replied Square, 'I would not be thought to undervalue reputation. Good fame is a species of the KALON, and it is by no means fitting to neglect it. Besides, to murder one's own reputation is a kind of fuicide, a detestable and odious vice. If you think proper, therefore, to conceal any infirmity of mine; (for fuch I may have, fince no man is perfectly perfect;) I promife you I will not betray myself. Things may be fitting to be done, which are not fitting to be boafted of? for by the perverse judgment of the world, that often becomes the subject of censures, which is, in truth, not only innocent but laudable. 'Right!' cries Jones, 'what can be more innocent than the 'indulgence of a natural appetite? or what more ' laudable than the propagation of our species:' 'To be ferious with you,' answered Square, 'I ' profess they always appeared so to me.' And yet,' faid Jones, 'you was of a different opinion, when my affair with this girl was first discovered.' 'Why, 'I must confess, says Square, 'as the matter was misrepresented to me by that parson Thwackum, I ' might condemn the corruption of innocence: it was that, Sir, it was that and that for you must know, Mr. Jones, in the consideration of fitness,

fitness, very minute circumstances, Sir, very minute circumstances cause great alteration. Well, cries Jones, 'be that at it will, it shall be your own fault, as I have promised you, if you ever hear any more of this adventure. Behave kindly to the girl, and I will never open my lips concerning the matter to any one. And, Molly, do you be faithful to your friend, and I will not only forgive your insidelity to me, but will do you all the service I can.' So saying, he took a hasty leave, and slipping down the ladder retired with much expedition.

Square was rejoiced to find this adventure was likely to have no worse conclusion, and as for Molly, being recovered from her confusion, she began at first to upbraid Square with having been the occasion of her loss of Jones; but that gentleman soon found the means of mitigating her anger, partly by caresses, and partly by a small nostrum from his purse, of wonderful and approved efficacy in purging off the ill humours of the mind, and in restoring it to a good temper.

She then poured forth a fast profusion of tenderness towards her new lover; turned all she had faid to Jones, and Jones himself into ridicule, and vowed, though he once had the possession of her person, that none but Square had ever been master of her heart.

CHAP. VI.

By comparing which with the former, the reader may possibly correct some abuse which he hath formerly been guilty of in the application of the word LOVE.

THE infidelity of Molly, which Jones had now discovered, would, perhaps, have vindicated a much greater degree of resentment than he expressed on the occasion; and if he had abandoned her directly from that moment, very few, I believe, would have blamed him.

Certain, however, it is, that he saw her in the light of compassion, and though his love to her was not of that kind which could give him any great uneasiness at her inconsistancy; yet he was not a little shocked on reflecting that he had himself originally corrupted her innocence; for to this corruption he imputed all the vice, into which she appeared now so likely to plunge himself.

This confideration gave him no little uneafines, till Betty, the elder fifter, was so kind some time afterwards entirely to cure him by a hint, that one Will Barnes, and not himself had been the first seducer of Molly; and that the little child, which he had hitherto so certainly concluded to be his own, might very probably have an equal title, at least, to

claim Barnes for its father.

Jones eagerly pursued this scent when he had first received it; and in a very short time was sufficiently assured that the girl had told him truth, not only by the confession of the fellow, but, at last, by that of Molly hersels.

This

This Will Barnes was a country gallant, and had acquired as many trophies of this kind as any enfign or attorney's clerk in the kingdom. He had, indeed, reduced several women to a state of utter profligacy, had broke the hearts of some, and had the honour of occasioning the violent death of one poor girl, who had either drowned herfelf, or, what was rather more

probable, had been drowned by him.

Among other of his conquests, this fellow had triumphed over the heart of Betty Seagrim. He had made love to her long before Molly was grown to be a fit object of that pastime; but had afterwards deferted her, and applied to her fifter, with whom he had almost immediate success. Now Will had, in reality, the fole possession of Molly's affection, while Jones and Square were almost equally facrifices to her interest, and to her pride.

Hence had grown that implacable hatred which we have before feen raging in the mind of Betty; though we did not think it necessary to assign this cause fooner, as envy itself alone was adequate to all the

effects we have mentioned.

Jones was become perfectly easy by possession of this fecret with regard to Molly; but as to Sophia, he was far from being in a flate of tranquillity; nay, indeed, he was under the most violent perturbation: his heart was now, if I may use the metaphor, entirely evacuated, and Sophia took absolute possession of it. He loved her with an unbounded passion, and plainly saw the tender fentiments fhe had for him; yet could not this affurance lessen his despair of obtaining the consent of her father, nor the horrors which attended his pursuit of her by any base or treacherous method.

The

The injury which he must thus do to Mr. Western, and the concern which would accrue to Mr. Allworthy, were circumstances that tormented him all day, and haunted him on his pillow at night. His life was a constant struggle between honour and inclination, which alternately triumphed over each other in his mind. He often resolved, in the absence of Sophia, to leave her father's house, and to see her no more; and as often, in her presence, forgot all those resolutions, and determined to pursue her at the hazard of his life, and at the forseiture of what was much dearer to him.

This conflict began foon to produce very strong and visible effects: for he lost all his usual sprightliness and gaiety of temper, and became not only melancholy when alone, but dejected and absent in company; nay, if ever he put on a forced mirth, to comply with Mr. Western's humour, the constraint appeared so plain, that he seemed to have been giving the strongest evidence of what he endeavoured to conceal

by fuch oftentation. 2007 50010

It may, perhaps, be a question, whether the art which he used to conceal his passion, or the means which honest nature employed to reveal it, betrayed him most: for while art made him more than ever referved to Sophia, and forbad him to address any of his discourse to her; nay, to avoid meeting her eyes, with the utmost caution; nature was no less busy in counterplotting him. Hence, at the approach of the young lady, he grew pale; and if this was sudden, started. If his eyes accidently met hers, the blood rushed into his cheeks, and his countenance became all over scarlet. If common civility ever obliged him

to speak to her, as to drink her health at table, his tongue was sure to faulter. If he touched her, his hand, nay, his whole frame trembled. And if any discourse tended, however remotely, to raise the idea of love, an involuntary sigh seldom failed to steal from his bosom. Most of which accidents nature was wonderfully industrious to throw daily in his way.

All these symptoms escaped the notice of the 'squire; but not so of Sophia. She soon perceived these agitations of mind in Jones, and was at no loss to discover the cause; for indeed she recognized it in her own breast. And this recognition is, I suppose, that sympathy which hath been so often noted in lovers, and which will sufficiently account for her being so

much quicker-fighted than her father.

But, to fay the truth, there is a more simple and plain method of accounting for that prodigious superiority of penetration which we must observe in some men over the rest of the human species, and one which will ferve not only in the case of lovers, but of all others. From whence it is that the knave is generally fo quick-fighted to those symptoms and operations of knavery which often dupe an honest man of a much better understanding? There furely is no general fympathy among knaves, nor have they, like free-malons. any common fign of communication. In reality, it is only because they have the same thing in their heads. and their thoughts are turned the same way. Thus, that Sophia faw, and that Western did not see the plain fymptoms of love in Jones can be no wonder, when we confider that the idea of love never entered into the head of the father, whereas the daughter, at present, thought of nothing else.

When

When Sophia was well fatisfied of the violent paffion which tormented poor Jones, and no lefs certain that The herfelf was its object, fhe had not the least difficulty in discovering the true cause of his present behaviour. This highly endeared him to her, and raifed in her mind two of the best affections which any lover can wish to raise in a mistress. These were esteem and pity; for fure the most outrageously rigid among her fex will excuse her pitying a man, whom fhe saw miferable on her own account; nor can they blame her for esteeming one who visibly, from the most honourable motives endeavoured to fmother a flame in his own bosom, which, like the famous Spartan thest, was preying upon and confuming his very vitals. Thus his backwardness, his shunning her, his coldness and his filence, were the forwardest, the most diligent, the warmest, and most eloquent advocates; and wrought so violently on her sensible and tender heart, that she foon felt for him all those gentle sensations which are confistent with a virtuous and elevated female mind. In fhort, all which esteem, gratitude, and pity, can inspire in such, towards an agreeable man- Indeed, all which the nicest delicacy can allow. - In a word, -The was in love with him to distraction.

One day this young couple accidently met in the garden, at the end of two walks, which were both bounded by that canal in which Jones had formerly risqued drowning to retrieve the little bird that Sophia

had there loft.

This place had been of late much frequented by Sophia. Here she used to ruminate, with a mixture of pain and pleasure, on an incident, which, however trifling in itself, had possibly sown the first seeds of that

that affection which was now arrived to fuch maturity in her heart.

Here then this young couple met. They were almost close together before either of them knew any thing of the other's approach. A by-stander would have discovered sufficient marks of confusion in the countenance of each; but they felt too much themfelves to make any observation. As soon as Jones had a little recovered his first furprize, he accosted the young lady with fome of the ordinary forms of falutation, which she in the same manner returned, and theier conversation began, as usual, on the delicious beauty of the morning. Hence they past to the beauty of the place, on which Jones launched forth very high encomiums. When they came to the tree whence he had formerly tumbled into the canal, Sophia could not help reminding him of that accident, and faid: ' I fancy, Mr. Jones, you have fome little fhuddering ' when you fee that water.' 'I affure you, Madam,' answered Jones, 'the concern you felt at the loss of ' your little bird, will always appear to me the highest circumstance in that adventure. Poor little Tommy, ' there is the branch he flood upon. How could the s little wretch have the folly to fly away from that fare of happiness in which I had the honour to place him? His fate was a just punishment for his ingrati-' tude.' 'Upon my word, Mr. Jones,' faid fhe, 'your ' gallantry very narrowly escaped as severe a fate. 'Sure the remembrance must affect you.' 'Indeed, ' Madam,' answered he, 'if I have any reason to reflect with forrow on it, it is, perhaps, that the water had not been a little deeper, by which I might have escaped many bitter heart-achs, that fortune · feems

! feems to have in store for me.' Fie, Mr. Jones. replied Sophia, 'I am fure you cannot be in earnest now. This affected contempt of life is only an excess of your complaisance to me. You would endea-· vour to lessen the obligation of having twice ventured it for my fake. Beware the third time.'-She fooke these last words with a smile and a softness inexpressible. Jones answered with a figh: 'He feared ' it was already too late for caution;'- and then looking tenderly and stedfastly on her, he cry'd: 'Oh! · Miss Western— Can you desire me to live? Can you wish me fo ill?' Sophia looking down on the ground, answered with some hesitation: 'Indeed, Mr. Jones, I do not wish you ill.'- 'Oh! I know too well that heavenly temper,' cries Jones, 'that di-' vine goodness which is beyond every other harm.' ' Nay, now,' answered she, 'I understand you not .--' I can flay no longer.' - 'I - I would not be under-' stood,' cries he, 'nay, I can't be understood. I know not what I fay. Meeting you here to unex-' pectedly. I have been unguarded for heaven's ' fake pardon me, if I have faid any thing to offend ' you - I did not mean it - indeed, I would rather have died-nay, the very thought would kill me.' 'You surprize me,' answered she,- 'How can you ' possibly think you have offended me?' 'Fear, Ma-' dam,' fays he, 'eafily runs into madness; and there is no degree of fear like that which I feel of offending you. How can I speak then? Nay don't look ' angrily at me, one frown will destroy me- I mean ' nothing. - Blame my eyes, or blame those beauties. · - What am I faying? Pardon me if I have faid too much. My heart overflowed. I have flruggled with 'my

' my love to the utmost, and have endeavoured to con-

ceal a fever which preys on my vitals, and will, I

hope, foon make it impossible for me ever to offend you more.

Mr. Jones now fell a trembling as if he had been shaken with the fit of an ague. Sophia, who was in a situation not very different from his, answered in these words: 'Mr. Jones, I will not affect to misunder, stand you; indeed I understand you too well; but for heaven's sake, if you have any affection for me, let me make the best of my way into the house. I wish I may be able to support myself thither.'

Jones, who was hardly able to support himself, of fered her his arm, which she condescended to accept, but begged he would not mention a word more to her of this nature at present. He promised he would not, intisting only on her forgiveness of what love, without the leave of his will, had forced from him: this, she told him, he knew how to obtain, by his future behaviour; and thus this young pair tottered and trembled along, the lover not once daring to squeeze the hand of his mistress, though it was lock'd in his.

Sophia immediately retired to her chamber, where Mrs. Honour and the hartfhorn were fummoned to her affiftance. As to poor Jones, the only relief to his difference mind was an unwelcome piece of news, which, as it opens a scene of a different nature from those in which the reader hath lately been conversant, will be communicated to him in the next chapter.

ture over to the tide, and the the pour at the

CHAP. VII. and or said the

In which Mr. Allworthy appears on a sick-

MR. Western was become so fond of Jones, that he was unwilling to part with him, though his arm had been long since cured; and Jones, either from the love of sport, or from some other reason, was easily persuaded to continue at his house, which he did sometimes for a fortnight together, without paying a single visit at Mr. Allworthy's; nay, without

ever hearing from thence.

CHAP

Mr. Allworthy had been for fome days indisposed with a cold, which had been attended with a little fever. This he had, however, neglected, as it was ufual with him to do all manner of diforders which did not confine him to his bed, or prevent his feveral faculties from performing their ordinary functions. A conduct which we would by no means be thought to approve or recommend to imitation: for furely the gentlemen of the Æsculapian art are in the right in advising, that the moment the disease is entered at one door, the physician should be introduced at the other; what else is meant by that old adage: Venienti occurrite morbo? "Oppose a distemper at its first approach." Thus the doctor and the difease meet in fair and equal conflict; whereas, by giving time to the latter, we often fuffer him to fortify and entrench himself, like a French army; so that the learned gentleman finds it very difficult, and fometimes impossible, to come at the enemy. Nay fometimes by gaining time, the difease applies to the French military politics, and corrupts nature over to his fide, and then all the powers of phyfic

fic must arrive too late. Agreeable to these observations was, I remember, the complaint of the great doctor Misaubin, who used very pathetically to lament the late applications which were made to his skill, saying: 'Bygar, me believe my pation take me ' for de undertaker; for dey never send for me till ' de physicion have kill dem.

Mr. Allworthy's distemper, by means of this neglest, gained such ground, that, when the increase of his fever obliged him to send for affistance, the doctor at his first arrival shook his head, wished he had been sent for sooner, and intimated that he thought him in very imminent danger. Mr. Allworthy, who had settled all his affairs in this world, and was as well prepared as it is possible for human nature to be for the other, received this information with the utmost calmness and unconcern. He could, indeed, whenever he laid himself down to rest, say with Cato in the tragical poem:

- - Let guilt or fear

Disturb man's rest. Cato knows neither of them; Indisterent in his choice, to sleep or die.

In reality he could fay this with ten times more reason and confidence than Cato, or any other proud fellow among the ancient or modern heroes: for he was not only devoid of fear; but might be confidered as a faithful labourer, when at the end of harvest he is summoned to receive his reward at the hands of a bountiful master.

The good man gave immediate orders for all his family to be fummoned round him. None of these were then abroad, but Mrs. Blifil, who had been some S 2

time in London, and Mr. Jones, whom the reader had just parted from at Mr. Western's, and who received

this furnmons just as Sophia had left him.

The news of Mr. Allworthy's danger (for the fervant told him he was dying) drove all thoughts of love out of his head. He hurried instantly into the chariot which was fent for him, and ordered the coachman to drive with all imaginable hafte; nor did the idea of Sophia, I believe, once occur to him on the way,

And now, the whole family, namely, Mr. Blifil, Mr. Jones, Mr. Thwackum, Mr. Square, and fome of the fervants (for fuch were Mr. Allworthy's orders) being all affembled round his bed, the good man fat up in it, and was beginning to speak, when Blifil fell to blubbering and began to express very loud and bitter lamentations. Upon this Mr. Allworthy shook him by the hand, and faid: 'Do not forrow thus, my dear nephew, at the most ordinary of all human occurrences. When misfortunes befal our friends we are justly grieved; for those are accidents which ' might often have been avoided, and which may feem to render the lot of one man more peculiarly unhappy than that of others; but death is certainly unavoidable, and is that common lot, in which alone the fortunes of all men agree; nor is the time when this happens to us very material. If the wifelt of men hath compared life to a span, surely we may be allowed to confider it as a day. It is my fate to Leave it in the evening; but those who are taken away earlier, have only loft a few hours, at the best little worth lamenting; and much oftner hours of labour and fatigue, of pain and forrow. One of the Roman poets, I remember, likens our leaving life to Simil our

our departure from a feast. A thought which hath often occurred to me, when I have feen men ftruggling to protract an entertainment, and to enjoy the company of their friends a few moments longer. 'Alas! how short is the most protracted of such en-' joyments! how immaterial the difference between him who retires the foonest, and him who stays the Latest! this is seeing life in the best view, and this unwil-Ingness to quit our friends is the most amiable motive, from which we can derive the fear of death; and yet the longest enjoyment which we can hope for of this kind, is of fo trivial a duration, that it is to a wife man truly contemptible. Few men, I own, think in this manner: for, indeed, few men think of death till they are in its jaws. However gigantic and terrible an object this may appear when it approaches them, they are nevertheless incapable of ' feeing it at any distance; nay, though they have been ever so much alarmed and frightned when they have apprehended themselves in danger of dying; they were no fooner cleared from this apprehenfion than even the fears of it are erased from their minds. But, alas! he who escapes from death is not pardoned, he is only reprieved, and reprieved to a fhort day.

'Grieve, therefore, no more, my dear child, on this occasion; an event which may happen every hour, which every element, nay almost every particle of matter, that surrounds us, is capable of producing, and which must and will most unavoidably reach us all at last, ought neither to occasion our surprize, nor our lamentation.

'My physician having acquainted me (which I take very kindly of him) that I am in danger of leaving

you all very fhortly, I have determined to fay a few words to you at this our parting, before my diffem-

per, which I find grows very fast upon me, puts it

out of my power.

But I shall waste my strength too much.— I intended to speak concerning my will, which though

I have fettled long ago, I think proper to mention fuch heads of it as concern any of you, that I may

have the comfort of perceiving you are all satisfied with the provision I have there made for you.

Nephew Blifil, I leave you the heir to my whole eftate, except only 500 l. a-year, which is to revert to you after the death of your mother, and except one

other estate of 500 l. a-year, and the sum of 6000 l. which I have bestowed in the following manner:

'The estate of 500 l. a-year I have given to you,
'Mr. Jones. And as I know the inconvenience which
'attends the want of ready money, I have added
'1000 l. in specie. In this I know not whether I have
'exceeded or fallen short of your expectation. Per'haps you will think I have given you too little, and
'the world will be as ready to condemn me for giv-

ing you too much; but the latter censure I despise, and as to the former, unless you should entertain

that common error, which I have often heard in my life pleaded as an excuse for a total want of charity;

acts of bounty, we are apt to raife demands, which

of all others are the most boundless and most difficult to fatisfy.— Pardon me the bare mention of this,

I will not fuspect any such thing.'

Jones

Jones flung himself at his benefactor's feet, and taking eagerly hold of his hand, affured him, his goodness to him, both now, and all other times had so infinitely exceeded not only his merit, but his hopes, that no words could express his sense of it. 'And I affure you, Sir,' said he, 'your present generosity' hath left me no other concern than for the present melancholy occasion— Oh, my friend! my father!' here his words choaked him, and he turned away to hide a tear which was starting from his eyes.

Allworthy then gently squeezed his hand, and proceeded thus: 'I am convinced, my child, that you have much goodness, generosity, and honour in your temper; if you will add prudence and religion to these, you must be happy: for the three former qualities, I admit, make you worthy of happiness, but they are the latter only which will put you in

possession of it.

One thousand pounds I have given to you, Mr. Thwackum; a fum, I am convinced, which greatly exceeds your desires, as well as your wants. However, you will receive it as a memorial of my friendship; and whatever superfluities may redound to you, that piety which you so rigidly maintain, will instruct you how to dispose of them.

'A like sum, Mr. Square, I have bequeathed to you. This, I hope, will enable you to pursue your profession with better success than hitherto. I have often observed with concern, that distress is more apt to excite contempt than commisseration, especially among men of business, with whom poverty is understood to indicate want of ability. But the little I have been able to leave you, will extricate you S 4

from those difficulties with which you have formerly fruggled: and then I doubt not but you will meet

with fufficient prosperity to supply what a man of

your philosophical temper will require.

'I find myself growing faint, so I shall refer you to my will for my disposition of the residue. My servants will there find some tokens to remember me by; and there are a few charities which, I trust, my executors will see faithfully performed. Bless you

'all. I am fetting out a little before you.'-

Here a footman came hastily into the room, and said there was an attorney from Salisbury, who had a particular message, which he said he must communicate to Mr. Allworthy himsels: that he seemed in a violent hurry, and protested he had so much business to do, that if he could cut himself into sour quarters, all would not be sufficient.

Go, child, faid Allworthy to Blifil, fee what the gentleman wants. I am not able to do any business now, nor can he have any with me, in which you are not at present more concerned than myself. Besides I really am—I am incapable of seeing any one at present, or of any longer attention. He then soluted them again, but he should be now glad to compose himself a little, finding that he had too much exhausted his spirits in discourse.

Some of the company shed tears at their parting; and even the philosopher Square wiped his eyes, albeit unused to the melting mood. As to Mrs. Wilkins, she dropt her pearls as fast as the Arabian trees their medicinal gums; for this was a ceremonal which that gentlewoman never omitted on a proper

occasion.

After this Mr. Allworthy again laid himself down on his pillow, and endeavoured to compose himself to rest.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing matter rather natural than pleafing.

BESIDES grief for her master, there was another source for that briny stream which so plentifully rose above the two mountainous cheeks-bones of the house-keeper. She was no sooner retired, than she began to mutter to herfelf in the following pleafant strain. 'Sure master might have made some difference, methinks, between me and the other fervants. I suppose he hath left me mourning; but, i fakins! if that be all, the devil shall wear it for him for me. I'd have his worfhip know I am no beggar. I have faved five hundred pound in his fervice, and after all to be used in this manner. It is a fine encouragement to fervants to be honest; and to be fure, if I have taken a little something now and then, others have taken ten times as much; and now we are all put in a lump together. If so be that it be so, the legacy may go to the devil with him that gave it. No, I won't give it up neither, because that will please some folks. No, I'll buy the gayest gown I can get, and dance over the old curmudgeon's grave in it. This is my reward for taking his part fo often, when all the country have cried shame of ' him, for breeding up his bastard in that manner; but he is going now where he must pay for all. It would have become him better to have repented of ' his fins on his death-bed, than to glory in them, and ' give away his estate out of his own family to a misbegot-

begotten child. Found in his bed, forfooth! a pretty flory! ay, ay, those that hide know where to find. Lord forgive him, I warrant he hath many more baftards to answer for, if the truth was known. One comfort is, they will all be known where he is a going now. "The fervants will find fome token "to remember me by." Those were the very words: I shall never forget them, if I was to live a thousand vears. Ay, ay, I shall remember you for huddling " me among the fervants. One would have thought he might have mentioned my name as well as that of ' Square; but he is a gentleman forfooth, though he ' had not cloaths on his back, when he came hither first. ' Marry come up with fuch gentlemen! though he hath lived here this many years, I don't believe there is arrow a fervant in the house ever saw the colour of his money. The devil fhall wait upon ' fuch a gentleman for me.' Much more of the like kind fhe muttered to herfelf; but this tafte fhall fuffice

Neither Thwackum nor Square were much better fatisfied with their legacies. Though they breathed not their resentment so loud, yet from the discontent which appeared in their countenances, as well as from the following dialogue, we collect that no great plea-

fure reigned in their minds.

to the reader.

About an hour after they had left the fick room, Square met Thwackum in the hall, and accosted him thus: 'Well, Sir, have you heard any news of your ' friend fince we parted from him?' 'If you mean' Mr. Allworthy,' answered Thwackum, 'I think ' you might rather give him the appellation of your

friend: for he feems to me to have deferved that " title."

' title.' 'The title is as good on your fide,' replied Square, 'for his bounty, fuch as it is, hath been equal' to both.' 'I should not have mentioned it first,' cries Thwackum, 'but fince you begin, I must inform you I am of a different opinion. There is a wide diffinction between voluntary favours and rewards. The duty I have done in his family, and the care I have taken in the education of his two boys, are fervices for which fome men might have expected a greater return. I would not have you ' imagine I am therefore diffatisfied; for St. Paul hath taught me to be content with the little I have. Had the modicum been less, I should have known my duty. But though the scripture obliges me to remain contented, it doth not enjoin me to flut my eyes to my own merit, nor restrain me from seeing, ' when I am injured by an unjust comparison.' 'Since ' you provoke me,' returned Square, 'that injury is done to me: nor did I ever imagine Mr. Allworthy ' had held my friendship so light, as to put me in ba-' lance with one who received his wages: I know to what it is owing; it proceeds from those narrow principles which you have been fo long endeavouring to infuse into him, in contempt of every thing which is great and noble. The beauty and loveliness of friendship is too strong for dim eyes, nor can it be perceived by any other medium, than that unerring rule of right, which you have so often endeavoured to ridicule, that you have perverted your friend's understanding.' 'I wish,' cries Thwackum in a rage, 'I wish, for the sake of his foul, your damnable doctrines have not perverted his faith. It is to this I impute his present behaviour, so unbe-' coming

coming a christian. Who but an atheist could think of leaving the world without having first made up his account? Without confessing his fins, and receiving that absolution, which he knew he had one in the house duly authorised to give him? He will feel the want of these necessaries when it is too late. When he is arrived at that place where there is wailing and gnafhing of teeth; it is then he will find in what mighty stead that heathen goddess, that virtue, which vou and all other deifts of the age adore, will fland him. He will then fummon his priest when there is none to be found, and will lament the want of that absolution, without which no finner can be fafe.' If it be fo material,' fays Square, 'why don't you present it him of your own accord?' 'It hath no virtue,' cries Thwackum, 'but to those who have fufficient grace to require it. But why do I talk thus to a heathen and an unbeliever? It is you that taught him this leffon, for which you have been well rewarded in this world, as I doubt not your disciple will foon be in the other.' 'I know not what you mean by reward,' faid Square, 'but if you hint at that pitiful memorial of our friendship, which he hath thought fit to bequeath me, I despise it; and nothing but the unfortunate fituation of my circumfrances should prevail on me to accept it.'

The physician now arrived, and began to enquire of the two disputants, how we all did above stairs? 'In a miserable way,' answered Thwackum. 'It is no more than I expected,' cries the doctor: 'but pray what symptoms have appeared since I left you?' No good ones, I am asraid,' replied Thwackum, after what past at our departure, I think there were 'little

'little hopes.' The bodily physician, perhaps, mifunderstood the curer of fouls, and before they came to an explanation, Mr. Blifil came to them with a most melancholy countenance, and acquainted them, that he brought fad news: for that his mother was dead at Salisbury. That fhe had been feized on the road home with the gout in her head and stomach, which had carried her off in a few hours. 'Good-lack-a-day,' fays the doctor, 'one cannot answer for events: but I wish I had been at hand to have been called in. 'The gout is a diftemper which it is difficult to treat; yet I have been remarkably fuccessful in it.' Thwackum and Square both condoled with Mr. Blifil for the loss of his mother, which the one advised him to bear like a man, and the other like a christian. The young gentleman faid, he knew very well we were all mortal, and he would endeavour to fubmit to his loss as well as he could. That he could not, however, help complaining a little against the peculiar severity of his fate, which brought the news of so great a calamity to him by furprize, and that at a time when he hourly expected the feverest blow he was capable of feeling from the malice of fortune. He faid, the present occasion would put to the test those excellent rudiments which he had learned from Mr. Thwackum and Mr. Square, and it would be entirely owing to them, if he was enabled to furvive fuch misfortunes.

It was now debated whether Mr. Allworthy should be informed of the death of his fister: this the doctor violently opposed; in which, I believe, the whole college would agree with him; but Mr. Blifil said, he had received such positive and repeated orders from his uncle, never to keep any secret from him, for fear of

the

the disquietude which it might give him, that he durst not think of disobedience, whatever might be the consequence. He said, for his part, considering the religious and philosophic temper of his uncle, he could not agree with the doctor in his apprehensions. He was therefore resolved to communicate it to him: for if his uncle recovered (as he heartily prayed he might) he knew he would never forgive an endeavour to keep

a fecret of this kind from him.

The physician was forced to submit to these resolutions which the two other learned gentlemen very highly commended. So together moved Mr. Bliss and the doctor towards the sick-room; where the physician first entered, and approached the bed, in order to feel his patient's pulse, which he had no sooner done, than he declared he was much better; that the last application had succeeded to a miracle, and had brought the sever to intermit; so that, he said, there appeared now to be as little danger as he had before

apprehended there were hopes.

To fay the truth, Mr. Allworthy's fituation had never been so bad, as the great caution of the doctor had represented: but as a wise general never despites his enemy, however inferior that enemy's force may be, so neither doth a wise physician ever despite a distemper, however inconsiderable. As the former preserves the same strict discipline, places the same guards, employs the same scouts, though the enemy be never so weak; so the latter maintains the same gravity of countenance, and shakes his head with the same significant air, let the distemper be never so trisling. And both, among many other good ones, may assign this solid reason for their conduct, that by these means

the greater glory redounds to them if they gain the victory, and the less disgrace, if by any unlucky accident they should happen to be conquered.

Mr. Allworthy had no fooner lifted up his eyes, and thanked heaven for these hopes of his recovery, than Mr. Blisil drew near, with a very dejected aspect, and having applied his handkerchief to his eye, either to wipe away his tears, or to do, as Ovid somewhere expresses himself on another occasion:

Si nullus erit, tamen excute nullum.

'If there be none, then wipe away that none.'
he communicated to his uncle what the reader hath
been just before acquainted with.

Allworthy received the news with concern, with patience, and with refignation. He dropt a tender tear, then composed his countenance, and at last cried:

The Lord's will be done in every thing.'

He now enquired for the messenger; but Bliss told him, it had been impossible to detain him a moment; for he appeared by the great hurry he was in to have some business of importance on his hands: that he complained of being hurried, and driven and torn out of his life, and repeated many times, that if he could divide himself into sour quarters, he knew how to dispose of every one.

Allworthy then defired Blifil to take care of the funeral. He faid, he would have his fifter deposited in his own chapel; and as to the particulars, he left them to his own discretion, only mentioning the person whom he would have employed on this

occasion.

out this read it Coff A Paul X work, nothing the

Which, among other things, may ferve as a comment on that faying of Æschines, that DRUNKENNESS SHEWS THE MIND OF A MAN, AS A MIRROUR RE-FLECTS HIS PERSON.

THE reader may, perhaps, wonder at hearing nothing of Mr. Jones in the last chapter. In fact. his behaviour was fo different from that of the persons there mentioned, that we chose not to confound his

name with theirs.

When the good man had ended his fpeech, Jones was the last who deferted the room. Thence he retired to his own apartment, to give vent to his concern; but the restlessness of his mind would not suffer him to remain long there; he flipped foftly, therefore, to Allworthy's chamber door, where he liftened a confiderable time without hearing any kind of motion within, unless a violent snoring, which at last his fears misrepresented as groans. This so alarmed him, that he could not forbear entering the room; where he found the good man in the bed, in a fweet composed fleep, and his nurse snoring in the above-mentioned hearty manner, at the bed's feet. He immediately took the only method of filencing this thorough-bals, whose music he feared might disturb Mr. Allworthy; and then fitting down by the nurse, he remained motionless till Blifil and the doctor came in together, and waked the fick man, in order that the doctor might feel his pulse, and that the other might communicate to him that piece of news, which, had Jones been apprized

prized of it, would have had great difficulty of finding its way to Mr. Allworthy's ear at fuch a feafon.

When he first heard Blifil tell his uncle this story, Jones could hardly contain the wrath which kindled in him at the other's indifcretion, especially as the doctor shook his head, and declared his unwillingness to have the matter mentioned to his patient. But as his passion did not so far deprive him of all use of his understanding, as to hide from him the confequences which any violent expression towards Blifil might have on the fick, this apprehension stilled his rage, at the present; and he grew afterwards so satisfied with finding that this news had, in fact produced no mischief, that he fuffered his anger to die in his own bosom, without ever mentioning it to Blifil.

The physician dined that day at Mr. Allworthy's; and having after dinner visited his patient, he returned to the company, and told them, that he had now the fatisfaction to fay, with affurance, that his patient was out of all danger; that he had brought his fever to a perfect intermission, and doubted not by throw-

ing in the bark to prevent its return.

This account so pleased Jones, and threw him into fuch immoderate excess of rapture, that he might be truly faid to be drunk with joy. An intoxication which greatly forwards the effects of wine; and as he was very free too with the bottle on this occasion, (for he drank many bumpers to the doctor's health, as well as to other toasts) he became very soon literally drunk.

Jones had naturally violent animal spirits: these being fet on float, and augmented by the spirit of wine, produced most extravagant effects. He kissed the doctor, and embraced him with the most passionate en-VOL. I.

conde that Colors.

dearments; swearing that, next to Mr. Allworthy himself, he loved him of all men living: 'Doctor,' added he, 'you deserve a statue to be erected to you 'at the public expence, for having preserved a man

who is not only the darling of all good men who know him, but a bleffing to fociety, the glory of his

country, and an honour to human nature. D—n me

if I don't love him better than my own foul."

'More shame for you,' cries Thwackum. 'Tho' I think you have reason to love him, for he hath 'provided very well for you. And, perhaps, it might

have been better for some folks, that he had not

· lived to fee just reason of revoking his gift.'

Jones now, looking on Thwackum with inconceivable disdain, answered: 'And doth thy mean soul 'imagine, that any such considerations could weigh with me? No, let the earth open and swallow her 'own dirt (if I had millions of acres I would say it) 'rather than swallow up my dear glorious friend.'

Quis Desiderio sit Pudor aut modus

Tam chari Capitis?*

The doctor now interposed, and prevented the effects of a wrath which was kindling between Jones and Thwackum; after which the former gave a loose to mirth, sang two or three amorous songs, and sell into every frantic disorder, which unbridled joy is apt to inspire; but so far was he from any disposition to quarrel, that he was ten times better humoured, if possible, than when he was sober.

of fo

^{* &#}x27;What modelty or measure can set bounds to our desire of so dear a friend!' The word desiderium here cannot be easily translated. It includes our desire of enjoying our friend again, and the grief which attends that desire.

To fay truth, nothing is more erroneous than the common observation, that men who are ill natured and quarrelfome when they are drunk, are very worthy perfons when they are fober: for drink, in reality, doth not reverse nature, or create passions in men which did not exist in them before. It takes away the guard of reason, and consequently forces us to produce those fymptoms which many, when fober, have art enough to conceal. It heightens and inflames our passions, (generally indeed that passion which is uppermost in our mind) fo that the angry temper, the amorous, the generous, the good-humoured, the avaricious, and all other dispositions of men, are in their cups heigh-

tened and exposed.

And yet as no nation produces so many drunken quarrels, especially among the lower people, as England; (for, indeed, with them, to drink and to fight together, are almost synonymous terms) I would not methinks, have it thence concluded, that the English are the worst-natured people alive. Perhaps the love of glory only is at the bottom of this; fo that the fair conclusion feems to be, that our countrymen have more of that love, and more of bravery, than any other Plebeians. And this the rather, as there is feldom any thing ungenerous, unfair, or ill-natured, exercifed on those occasions: nay, it is common for the combatants to express good-will for each other, even at the time of the conflict; and as their drunken mirth generally ends in a battle, so do most of their battles end in friendship.

But to return to our history. Though Jones had fhewn no design of giving offence, yet Mr. Blifil was highly offended at a behaviour which was to inconfif-

tent with the sober and prudent reserve of his own temper. He bore it too with the greater impatience, as it appeared to him very indecent at this season: 'When, as he said, 'the house was a house of mourning, on 'the account of his dear mother; and if it had pleased heaven to give him some prospect of Mr. Allworthy's recovery, it would become them better to express the exultations of their hearts in thanksgiving, than in drunkenness and riots; which were properer methods, to increase the divine wrath, than to avert it.' Thwackum, who had swallowed more liquor than Jones, but without any ill effect on his brain, seconded the pious harangue of Bliss: but Square, for reasons which the reader may probably guess, was totally silent.

Wine had not so totally overpowered Jones, as to prevent his recollecting Mr. Blifil's loss, the moment it was mentioned. As no person, therefore, was more ready to confess and condemn his own errors, he offered to shake Mr. Blifil by the hand, and begged his pardon, saying: 'His excessive joy for Mr. Allworthy's recovery had driven every other thought out

of his mind.

Blifil fcornfully rejected his hand; and, with much indignation, answered: 'It was little to be wondered 'at, if tragical spectacles made no impression on the 'blind; but, for his part, he had the missortune to 'know who his parents were, and consequently must be affected with their loss.'

Jones, who, notwithstanding his good-humour, had some mixture of the irascible in his constitution, leaped hastily from his chair, and catching hold of Bliss's collar, cried out: 'D—n you for a rascal do you infult

fult me with the misfortune of my birth? He accompanied these words with such rough actions, that they soon got the better of Mr. Bliss's peaceful temper; and a scuffle immediately ensued, which might have produced mischies, had it not been prevented by the interposition of Thwackum and the physician; for the philosophy of Square rendered him superior to all emotions, and he very calmly smoaked his pipe, as was his custom in all broils, unless when he apprehended some danger of having it broke in his mouth.

The combatants being now prevented from executing present vengeance on each other, betook themselves to the common resources of disappointed rage, and vented their wrath in threats and defiance. In this kind of conflict, fortune, which in the personal attack, seemed to incline to Jones, was now altoge-

ther as favourable to his enemy.

A truce, nevertheless, was at length agreed on, by the mediation of the neutral parties, and the whole company again sat down at the table; where Jones being prevailed on to ask pardon, and Blifil to give it, peace was restored, and every thing seemed in

Statu quo.

But though the quarrel was, in all appearance, perfectly reconciled, the good-humour which had been interrupted by it, was by no means reftored. All merriment was now at an end, and the subsequent discourse consisted only of grave relations of matters of fact, and of as grave observations upon them. A species of conversation, in which, though there is much of dignity and instruction, there is but little entertainment. As we presume, therefore, to convey only this last to the reader, we shall pass by whatever was

T

faid, till the rest of the company having, by degrees, dropped off, left only Square and the physician together; at which time the conversation was a little heightened by some comments on what had happened between the two young gentlemen; both of whom the doctor declared to be no better than scoundrels; to which appellation the philosopher, very sagaciously shaking his head, agreed.

CHAP. X.

Shewing the truth of many observations of OVID, and of other more grave writers, who have proved, beyond contradiction, that wine is often the forerunner of incontinency.

JONES retired from the company, in which we have feen him engaged, into the fields where he intended to cool himself by a walk in the open air, before he attended Mr. Allworthy. There, whilst he renewed those meditations on his dear Sophia, which the dangerous illness of his friend and benefactor had for some time interrupted, an accident happened, which with forrow we relate, and with sorrow doubtless will it be read: however, that historic truth to which we profess so inviolable an attachment, obliges us to communicate it to posterity.

It was now a pleasant evening in the latter end of June, when our hero was walking in a most delicious grove, where the gentle breezes fanning the leaves, together with the sweet trilling of a murmuring stream, and the melodious notes of nightingales, formed alto-

gether

gether the most enchanting harmony. In this scene, so sweetly accommodated to love, he meditated on his dear Sophia. While his wanton fancy roved unbounded over all her beauties, and his lively imagination painted the charming maid in various ravifhing forms, his warm heart melted with tenderness, and at length throwing himself on the ground, by the side of a gendy murmuring brook, he broke forth into the following ejaculation.

'O Sophia, would heaven give thee to my arms, how bleft would be my condition! Curft be that fortune which fets a distance between us. Was but possessed of thee, one only fuit of rags thy whole estate, is there a man on earth whom I would envy! How contemptible would the brightest Circassian beauty, drest in all the jewels of the Indies, appear to my eyes! But why do I mention another woman? Could I think my eyes capable of looking at any other with tenderness, these hands should tear them from my head. No, my Sophia, if cruel fortune feparates us for ever, my foul I hall doat on thee alone. The chaftest constancy will I ever preserve to thy image. Though I should never have possession of thy charming person, still shalt thou alone have posfellion of my thoughts, my love, my foul. Oh! my fond heart is fo wrapt in that tender bosom, that the brightest beauties would for me have no charms, nor would a hermit be colder in their embraces. Sophia, Sophia alone shall be mine. What raptures are in that name! I will engrave it on every tree.

At these words he started up, and beheld—not his Sophia—no, nor a Circassian maid richly and elegantly artired for the grand signior's seraglio. No; with-

out a gown, in a shift that was somewhat of the coarsell, and none of the cleanest, bedewed likewise with some odoriferous effluvia, the produce of the day's labour, with a pitch-fork in her hand, Molly Seagrim approached. Our hero had his pen-knife in his hand, which he had drawn for the before-mentioned purpose of carving on the bark; when the girl coming near him, cry'd out with a smile: 'You don't intend to kill me, 'squire, I hope!' 'Why should you think I would kill you?' answered Jones. 'Nay,' replied the, 'after your cruel usage of me when I saw you last, killing me would, perhaps, be too great kindiness for me to expect.'

Here enfued a parley, which, as I do not think myfelf obliged to relate it, I shall omit. It is sufficient that it lasted a full quarter of an hour, at the conclusion of which they retired into the thickest part of the

grove.

Some of my readers may be inclined to think this event unnatural. However, the fact is true; and, perhaps, may be fufficiently accounted for, by fuggesting, that Jones probably thought one woman better than none, and Molly as probably imagined two men to be better than one. Besides the before-mentioned motive assigned to the present behaviour of Jones, the reader will be likewife pleafed to recollect in his favour, that he was not at this time perfect mafter of that wonderful power of reason, which so well enables grave and wife men to fubdue their unruly passions, and to decline any of these prohibited amusements. Wine now had totally fubdued this power in Jones. He was, indeed, in a condition, in which if reason had interposed, though only to advise, the might have received

received the answer which one Cleostratus gave many years ago to a silly fellow, who asked him, if he was not ashamed to be drunk? 'Are not you,' said Cleostratus, 'ashamed to admonish a drunken man? — To say the truth, in a court of justice drunkenness must not be an excuse, yet in a court of conscience it is greatly so; and therefore Aristotle, who commends the laws of Pittacus, by which drunken men received double punishment for their crimes, allows there is more of policy than justice in that law. Now, if there are any transgressions pardonable from drunkenness, they are certainly such as Mr. Jones was at present guilty of; on which head I could pour forth a vast profitsion of learning, if I imagined it would either entertain my reader, or teach him any thing more than he knows already. For his sake, therefore, I shall keep my learning to myself, and return to my history.

It hath been observed, that fortune seldom doth things by halves. To say truth, there is no end to her freaks, whenever she is disposed to gratify or displease. No sooner had our hero retired with his

Dido, but:

Speluncam Blifil, Dux & Divinus eandem
Deveniunt

the parson and the young 'squire, who were taking a serious walk, arrived at the stile which leads into the grove, and the latter caught a view of the lovers, just

as they were finking out of fight.

Blifil knew Jones very well, though he was at above a hundred yards distance, and he was as positive to the fex of his companion, though not to the individual person. He started, blessed himself, and uttered a very solemn ejaculation.

T 5

Thwack-

Thwackum expressed some surprize at these sudden emotions, and asked the reason of them. To which Bliss answered: 'he was certain he had seen a sellow 'and wench retire together among the bushes, which he doubted not was with some wicked purpose.' As to the name of Jones he thought proper to conceal it, and why he did so must be left to the judgment of the sagacious reader: for we never chuse to assign motives to the actions of men, when there is any possibility of

our being mistaken.

The parson, who was not only strictly chaste in his own person, but a great enemy to the opposite vice in all others, fired at this information. He desired Mr. Blifil to conduct him immediately to the place, which as he approached, he breathed forth vengeance mixed with lamentations; nor idid he refrain from casting some oblique reflections on Mr. Allworthy; insinuating that the wickedness of the country was principally owing to the encouragement he had given to vice, by having exerted such kindness to a bastard, and by having mitigated that just and wholesome rigour of the law, which allots a very severe punishment to loose wenches.

The way through which our hunters were to pals, in pursuit of their game, was so beset with briars, that it greatly obstructed their walk, and caused, besides, such a rustling, that Jones had sufficient warning of their arrival, before they could surprise him; nay, indeed, so incapable was Thwackum of concealing his indignation, and such vengeance did he mutter forth every step he took, that this alone must have abundantly satisfied Jones, that he was (to use the language

of sportsmen) found sitting.

CHAR. XI.

In which a simile of Mr. Pope's Period of a Mile, introduces as bloody a battle as can possibly be fought, without the assistance of steel or cold iron.

A S in the feafon of RUTTING (an uncouth phrase, A by which the vulgar denote that gentle dalliance which, in the * well-wooded forest of Hamps hire, passes between lovers of the ferine kind;) if while the lofty crefted flag meditates the amorous sport, a conple of puppier, or any other beafts of hostile note. Thould wander so near the temple of Venus Ferina, that the fair hind should shrink from the place, touched with that somewhat, either of fear or frolic, of nicety or skittishness, with which nature hath bedecked all females, or hath, at least, instructed them how to put it on; left, through the indelicacy of males, the Samian mysteries should be pried into by unhallowed eyes; for, at the celebration of these rites, the female priestess cries out with her in Virgil, (who was then, probably, hard at work on fuch celebration:)

Procul, O procul este, profani;
Proclamat Vates, totoque absistite Luco.

—— Far hence be fouls prophane, The fibyl cry'd, and from the grove abstain.

DRYDEN.

If, I fay, while these facred rites, which are in common to Genus omne Animantium, are in agitation between the stag and his mistress, any hostile beasts should

^{*} This is an ambiguous phrase, and may mean either a forest well cloathed with wood, or well stript of it.

fhould venture too near, on the first hint given by the frighted hind, sierce and tremendous rushes forth the stag to the entrance of the thicket; there stands he centinel over his love, stamps the ground with his foot, and with his horns brandis hed alost in air, proudly

provokes the apprehended foe to combat.

Thus, and more terrible, when he perceived the enemy's approach, leaped forth our hero. Many a step advanced he forwards, in order to conceal the trembling hind, and, if possible, to secure her retreat. And now Thwackum, having first darted some livid lightning from his fiery eyes, began to thunder forth: ! Fie upon it! Fie upon it! Mr. Jones. Is it possible 'you should be the person?' 'You see,' answered Jones, 'it is possible I should be here.' 'And who,' faid Thwackum, 'is that wicked flut with you?' 'If I have any wicked flut with me,' cries Jones, 'it is possible I shall not let you know who she is. 'I command you to tell me immediately,' fays Thwackum, and I would not have you imagine, young man, that your age, though it hath formewhat a bridged the purpose of tuition, hath totally taken away the authority of the master. The relation of the mafter and scholar is indelible, as, indeed, all other relations are: for they all derive their origiand from heaven. I would have you think yourfelf, therefore, as much obliged to obey me now, as when I taught you your first rudiments.' 'I believe you would,' cried Jones, 'but that will not happen, unless you had the same birchen argument to convince me.' 'Then I must tell you plainly,' said Thwackum, 'I am refolved to discover the wicked wretch.' 'And I must tell you plainly,' returned Tones,

Jones, 'I am resolved you shall not.' Thwackum then offered to advance, and Jones laid hold of his arms; which Mr. Blifil endeavoured to rescue, declaring, 'he would not see his old master insulted.'

Jones now finding himself engaged with two, thought it necessary to rid himself of one of his antagonists as soon as possible. He, therefore, applied to the weakest first; and letting the parson go, he directed a blow at the young 'squire's breast, which luckily taking place, reduced him to measure his length on the ground.

Thwackum was so intent on the discovery, that the moment he found himself at liberty, he stept forward directly into the fern, without any great consideration of what might, in the mean time, beful his friend; but he had advanced a very sew paces into the thicket before Jones, having deseated Bliss, overtook the parson, and dragged him backward by the skirt of his coat.

This parson had been a champion in his youth, and had won much honour by his fift, both at school and at the university. He had now, indeed, for a great number of years, declined the practice of that noble art; yet was his courage full as ftrong as his faith, and his body no less strong than either. He was moreover. as the reader may, perhaps, have conceived, fomewhat irafcible in his nature. When he looked back. therefore, and faw his friend ffretched out on the ground, and found himself at the same time so roughly handled by one who had formerly been only passive in all conflicts between them, (a circumstance which highly aggravated the whole) his patience at length gave way; he threw himself into a posture of offence, and collecting all his force, attacked Jones in the front.

front, with as much impetuolity as he had formerly attacked him in the rear.

Our hero received the enemy's attack with the most undaunted intrepidity, and his bosom resounded with the blow. This he prefently returned with no less violence, aiming likewise at the parson's breast: but he dextroufly drove down the fift of Jones, so that it reached only his belly, where two pounds of beef and as many of pudding were then deposited, and whence confequently no hollow found could proceed. Many lusty blows, much more pleasant as well as easy, to have feen, than to read or describe, were given on both fides; at last a violent fall in which Jones had thrown his knees into Thwackum's breaft, so weakened the latter, that victory had been no longer dubious, had not Blifil, who had now recovered his strength, again renewed the fight, and, by engaging with Jones, given the parson a moment's time to shake his ears, and to regain his breath.

And now both together attacked our hero, whose blows did not retain that force with which they had fallen at first; so weakened was he by his combat with Thwackum: for though the pedagogue chose rather to play Solos on the human instrument, and had been lately used to those only, yet he still retained enough of his ancient knowledge to perform his part very well

in a Duet.

The victory, according to modern custom, was like to be decided by numbers, when, on a sudden, a sourth pair of fists appeared in the battle, and immediately paid their compliments to the parson; and the owner of them, at the same time, crying out: 'are you not as hamed and be d—n'd to you, to fall two of you upon one?'

The battle, which was of the kind that for distinction's fake is called ROYAL, now raged with the utmost violence during a few minutes; till Blisil being a second time laid sprawling by Jones, Thwackum condescended to apply for quarter to his new antagonist, who was now found to be Mr. Western himself; for in the heat of the action none of the combatants

had recognized him.

In fact, that honest 'squire, happening in his afternoon's walk with some company, to pass through the field where the bloody battle was fought, and having concluded from seeing three men engaged, that two of them must be on a side, he hastened from his companions, and with more gallantry than policy, espoused the cause of the weaker party. By which generous proceeding, he very probably prevented Mr. Jones from becoming a victim to the wrath of Thwackum, and to the pious friendship which Blisil bore his old master: for besides the disadvantage of such odds, Jones had not yet sufficiently recovered the former strength of his broken arm. This reinforcement, however, soon put an end to the action, and Jones with his ally obtained the victory.

CHAP. XII.

In which is seen a more moving spectacle, than all the blood in the bodies of Thwackum and Blifil, and of twenty other such, is capable of producing.

THE rest of Mr. Western's company were now come up, being just at the instant when the action was over. These were the honest clergyman,

whom

whom we have formerly feen at Mr. Western's table, Mrs. Western, the aunt of Sophia; and, lastly, the

lovely Sophia herfelf.

At this time, the following was the aspect of the bloody field. In one place, lay on the ground, all pale and almost breathless, the vanquished Bliss. Near him stood the conqueror Jones, almost covered with blood, part of which was naturally his own, and part had been lately the property of the Reverend Mr. Thwackum. In a third place stood the said Thwackum, like king Porus, sullenly submitting to the conqueror. The last figure in the piece was Western the Great, most gloriously forbearing the vanquished foe.

Blifil, in whom there was little fign of life, was at first the principal object of the concern of every one, and particularly of Mrs. Western, who had drawn from her pocket a bottle of hartshorn, and was herself about to apply it to his nostrils; when on a sudden the attention of the whole company was diverted from poor Blifil, whose spirit, if it had any such design, might have now taken an opportunity of stealing off to the other world, without any ceremony.

For now a more melancholy and a more lovely object lay motionless before them. This was no other than the charming Sophia herself, who, from the fight of blood, or from fear for her father, or from some other reason, had fallen down in a swoon, before any

one could get to her affiftance.

Mrs. Western first saw her, and screamed. Immediately two or three voices cried out, Miss Western is dead. Hartshorn, water, every remedy was called for, almost at one and the same instant.

The

The reader may remember, that in our description of this grove we mentioned a murmuring brook, which brook did not come there, as such gentle streams flow through vulgar romances, with no other purpose than to murmur. No; fortune had decreed to ennoble this little brook with a higher honour than any of those which wash the plains of Arcadia, ever deserved.

Jones was rubbing Blifil's temples, for he began to fear he had given him a blow too much, when the words, Miss Western and Dead, rushed at once on his ear. He started up, lest Blifil to his fate, and slew to Sophia, whom, while all the rest were running against each other backward and forward, looking for water in the dry paths, he caught up in his arms, and then ran away with her over the field, to the rivulet above-mentioned; where, plunging himself into the water, he contrived to besprinkle her face, head, and neck very plentifully.

Happy was it for Sophia, that the same confusion which prevented her other friends from serving her, prevented them likewise from obstructing Jones. He had carried her half way before they knew what he was doing, and he had actually restored her to life before they reached the water-side: she stretched out her arms, opened her eyes, and cried: 'Oh, heavens!' just

as her father, aunt, and the parson came up.

Jones, who had hitherto held this lovely burthen in his arms, now relinquished his hold; but gave her at the same instant a tender cares, which, had her senses been then perfectly restored, could not have escaped her observation. As she expressed, therefore, no displeasure at this freedom, we suppose she was not sufficiently recovered from her swoon at the time.

Vot. I. U This

This tragical scene was now converted into a sudden scene of joy. In this our hero was, most certainly, the principal character: for as he probably felt more ecstatic delight in having saved Sophia, than she herself received from being saved; so neither were the congratulations paid to her equal to what were conferred on Jones, especially Mr. Western himself, who, after having once or twice embraced his daughter, fell to hugging and kissing Jones. He called him the preserver of Sophia, and declared there was nothing, except her, or his estate, which he would not give him; but, upon recollection, he afterwards excepted his forhounds, the Chevalier, and Miss Slouch (for so he called his favourite mare.)

All fears for Sophia being now removed, Jones became the object of the 'fquire's confideration: 'Come, 'my lad,' fays Western, 'd'off thy quoat and wash thy feace: for art in a devilish pickle, I promise thee. Come, come, wash thyself, and sha't go

'huome with me; and we'll zee to vind thee another quoat.'

Jones immediately complied, threw off his coat, went down to the water, and was hed both his face and bosom: for the latter was as much exposed, and as bloody as the former: but though the water could clear off the blood, it could not remove the black and blue marks which Thwackum had imprinted on both his face and breast, and which, being discerned by Sophia, drew from her a sigh, and a look full of inexpressible tenderness.

Jones received this full in his eyes, and it had infinitely a stronger effect on him than all the contusions which he had received before. An effect, however, widely widely different; for fo foft and balmy was it, that, had all his former blows been flabs, it would for fome minutes have prevented his feeling their finant.

The company now moved backwards, and foon arrived where Thwackum had got Mr. Blifil again on his legs. Here we cannot suppress a pious wish, that all quarrels were to be decided by those weapons only with which nature, knowing what is proper for us, hath fupplied us; and that cold iron was to be used in digging no bowels, but those of the earth. Then would war, the pastime of monarchs, be almost inoffensive, and battles between great armies might be fought at the particular defire of feveral ladies of quality; who, together with the kings themselves, might be actual spectators of the conflict. Then might the field be this moment well strewed with human carcasses, and the next, the dead men, or infinitely the greatest part of them, might get up, like Mr. Bayes's troops, and march off either at the found of a drum or fiddle, as fhould be previoufly agreed on.

I would avoid, if possible, treating this matter sudicrously, lest grave men and politicians, whom I know to be offended at a jest, may cry pish at it; but, in reality, might not a battle be as well decided by the greater number of broken heads, bloody noses, and black eyes, as by the greater heaps of mangled and murdered human bodies? Might not towns be contended for in the same manner? Indeed, this may be thought too detrimental a scheme to the French interest, since they would thus lose the advantage they have over other nations, in the superiority of their engineers: but when I consider the gallantry and generosity of that people, I am persuaded they

J 2 would

Mould

would never decline putting themselves upon a par with their adversary; or, as the phrase is, making themselves his match.

But fuch reformations are rather to be wifhed than hoped for: I shall content myself, therefore, with this

Thort hint, and return to my narrative.

Western began now to enquire into the original rife of this quarrel. To which neither Blifil nor Jones gave any answer; but Thwackum faid furlily: 'I be-Lieve the cause is not far of: if you beat the bushes well, you may find her.' 'Find her!' replied Western, 'what, have you been fighting for a wench.' Afk the gentleman in his waiftcoat there,' faid Thwackum, 'he best knows.' 'Nay, then,' cries Western, 'it is a wench certainly. - Ah, Tom, Tom, thou art a liquorish dog; but come, gentlemen, be all friends, and go home with me, and make final peace over a bottle.' 'I afk your pardon, Sir,' fays Thwackum, 'it is no fuch flight matter for a man of my character to be thus injurioufly treated, and buffered by a boy; only because I would have done my duty, in endeavouring to detect and bring to 'justice a wanton harlot; but, indeed, the principal fault lies in Mr. Allworthy and yourfelf: for, if you out the laws in execution, as you ought to do, you will foon rid the country of these vermin.

Western. 'I think we ought to encourage the recruiting those numbers which we are every day losing in the war: but where is she?— Prithee, Tom, shew me.' He then began to beat about, in the same language, and in the same manner, as if he had been beating for a hare, and at last cried out: 'Soho! Puss is not far off. Here's her form, upon my foul; I believe I may cry stole away.' And indeed so he might, for he had now discovered the place whence the poor girl had, at the beginning of the fray, stolen away, upon as many feet as a hare generally uses in

travelling.

Sophia now defired her father to return home; faying, the found herfelf very faint, and apprehended a relapse. The fquire immediately complied with his daughter's request (for he was the fondest of parents.) He earnestly endeavoured to prevail with the whole company to go and fup with him; but Blifil and Thwackum absolutely refused; the former faying, there were more reasons than he could then mention why he must decline this honour; and the latter declaring (perhaps rightly) that it was not proper for a person of his function to be seen at any place in his present condition.

Iones was incapable of refuling the pleasure of being with his Sophia. So on he marched with 'fquire Western and his ladies, the parson bringing up the rear. This had, indeed, offered to tarry with his brother Thwackum, professing his regard for the cloth would not permit him to depart; but Thwackum would not accept the favour, and with no great civi-

lity, pushed him after Mr. Western.

Thus ended this bloody fray; and thus shall end

the fifth book of this history.

HISTORY

OF A

FOUNDLING.

BOOK VI.

Containing about three weeks.

CHAP. I.
Of love.

Nour last book we have been obliged to deal pretty much with the passion of love; and in our succeeding book, shall be forced to handle this subject still more largely. It may not, therefore, in this place, be improper to apply ourselves to the examination of that modern doctrine, by which certain philosophers, among many other wonderful discoveries, pretend to have found out, that there is no such passion in the human breast.

Whether these philosophers be the same with that furprising sect, who are honourably mentioned by the late Dr. Swist; as having by the mere force of genius alone, without the least assistance of any kind of learn-

ing,

First,

ing, or even reading, discovered that profound and invaluable fecret, that there is no God; or whether they are not rather the same with those who, some years fince, very much alarmed the world, by fhewing that there were no fuch things as virtue or goodness really existing in human nature, and who deduced our best actions from pride, I will not here presume to determine. In reality, I am inclined to fuspect, that all these several finders of truth are the very identical men, who are by others called the finders of gold. The method used in both these searches after truth, and after gold, being indeed one and the same, viz. the fearching, rummaging, and examining into a nafty place; indeed, in the former instances, into the naftiest of all places, A BAD MIND.

But though in this particular, and perhaps in their fuccess, the truth-finder, and the gold-finder, may very properly be compared together; yet in modesty, furely, there can be no comparison between the two; for who ever heard of a gold finder that had the impudence or folly to affert, from the ill fuccess of his fearch, that there was no fuch thing as gold in the world; whereas the truth-finder, having raked out that jakes, his own mind, and being there capable of tracing no ray of divinity, nor any thing virtuous, or good, or lovely, or loving, very fairly, honestly, and logically concludes, that no fuch things exist in the

whole creation.

To avoid, however, all contention, if possible, with these philosophers, if they will be called so; and to shew our own disposition to accommodate matters peaceably between us, we shall here make them some concesfions, which may possibly put an end to the dispute. U 4

First, we will grant that many minds, and perhaps those of the philosophers, are entirely free from the

least traces of fuch a passion.

Secondly, that what is commonly called love, namely, the defire of fatisfying a voracious appetite with a certain quantity of delicate white human flesh, is by no means that passion for which I here contend. This is indeed more properly hunger; and as no glutton is as hamed to apply the word love to his appetite, and to say he Loves such and such dishes; so may the lover of this kind, with equal propriety say, he HUNGERS after such and such women.

Thirdly, I will grant, which I believe will be a most acceptable concession, that this love for which I am an advocate, though it satisfies itself in a much more delicate manner, doth nevertheless seek its own satisfaction as much as the grossess of all our appetites.

And, lastly, that this love, when it operates towards one of a different sex, is very apt, towards its complete gratification, to call in the aid of that hunger which I have mentioned above; and which it is so far from abating, that it heightens all its delights to a degree scarce imaginable by those who have never been susceptible of any other emotions, than what have

proceeded from appetite alone.

In return to all these concessions, I desire of the philosophers to grant, that there is in some (I believe in many) human breasts, a kind and benevolent disposition, which is gratified by contributing to the happiness of others. That in this gratification alone, as in friendship, in parental and filial affection, as indeed in general philanthropy, there is a great and exquisite delight. That if we will not call such disposition love.

love, we have no name for it. That though the pleafures arising from such pure love may be heightened and sweetened by the assistance of amorous desires, yet the former can subsist alone, nor are they destroyed by the intervention of the latter. Lastly, that esteem and gratitude are the proper motives to love, as youth and beauty are to desire; and therefore though such desire may naturally cease, when age or sickness overtakes its object; yet these can have no essect on love, nor ever shake or remove from a good mind, that senfation or passion which hath gratitude and esteem for its basis.

To deny the existence of a passion of which we often see manifest instances, seems to be very strange and absurd; and can indeed proceed only from that self-admonition which we have mentioned above: but how unfair is this? Doth the man who recognizes in his own heart no traces of avarice or ambition, conclude therefore that there are no such passions in human nature? Why will we not modestly observe the same rule in judging of the good, as well as the evil of others? Or why, in any case, will we, as Shakespear phrases it, 'put the world in our own person?'

Predominant vanity is, I am afraid, too much concerned here. This is one inflance of that adulation which we bestow on our own minds, and this almost universally. For there is scarce any man, how much soever he may despise the character of a flatterer, but will condescend in the meanest manner to flatter him-

felf.

To those, therefore, I apply for the truth of the above observations, whose own minds can bear testimony to what I have advanced.

Us

Examine

Examine your heart, my good reader, and refolve whether you do believe these matters with me. If you do, you may now proceed to their exemplification in the following pages; if you do not, you have, I affure you, already read more than you have underflood; and it would be wifer to pursue your business, or your pleasures (such as they are) than to throw away any more of your time in reading what you can neither taste nor comprehend. To treat of the effects of love to you, must be as absurd as to discourse on colours to a man born blind; fince possibly your idea of love may be as abfurd as that which we are told fuch blind man once entertained of the colour scarlet, that colour feemed to him to be very much like the found of a trumpet: and love probably may, in your opinion, very greatly resemble a dish of soup, or a sirloin of roaft-beef.

CHAP. II.

The character of Mrs. Western. Her great learning and knowledge of the world, and an instance of the deep penetration which she derived from those advantages.

THE reader hath feen Mr. Western, his sister, and daughter, with young Jones, and the parson going together to Mr. Western's house, where the greater part of the company spent the evening with much joy and festivity. Sophia was indeed the only grave person: for as to Jones, though love had now gotten entire possession of his heart, yet the pleasing reslection on Mr. Allworthy's recovery, and the presence of his mistress, joined to some tender looks which she

The now and then could not refrain from giving him, fo elevated our hero, that he joined the mirth of the other three, who were perhaps as good-humoured

people as any in the world.

Sophia retained the same gravity of countenance the next morning at breakfast; whence she retired likewife earlier than usual, leaving her father and aunt together. The 'fquire took no notice of this change in his daughter's disposition. To say the truth, though he was somewhat of a politician, and had been twice a candidate in the country interest at an election, he was a man of no great observation. His fifter was a lady of a different turn. She had lived about the court, and had feen the world. Hence fhe had acquired all that knowledge which the faid world ufually communicates: and was a perfect mistress of manners, customs, ceremonies, and fashions; nor did her erudition ftop here. She had confiderably improved her mind by study; she had not only read all the modern plays, operas, oratorios poems, and romances; in all which she was a critic; but had gone through Rapin's History of England, Eachard's Roman History, and many French Memoires pour servir à l'Histoire; to these The had added most of the political pamphlets and journals, published within the last twenty years. From which she had attained a very competent skill in politics, and could discourse very learnedly on the affairs of Europe. She was, moreover, excellently well fkilled in the doctrine of amour, and knew better than any body who and who were together: a knowledge which The the more easily attained, as her pursuit of it was never diverted by any affairs of her own; for either fhe had no inclinations, or they had never been folicited; which

which last is indeed very probable: for her masculine person, which was near six foot high, added to her manner and learning, possibly prevented the other sex from regarding her, notwithstanding her petticoats, in the light of a woman. However, as she had considered the matter scientifically, she persectly well knew, though she had never practised them, all the arts which fine ladies use when they desire to give encouragement, or to conceal liking, with all the long appendage of smiles, ogles, glances, &c. as they are at present practised in the beau monde. To sum the whole, no species of disguise or affectation had escaped her notice; but as to the plain simple workings of honest nature, as she had never seen any such, she could know but little of them.

By means of this wonderful fagacity, Mrs. Western had now, as the thought, made a discovery of something in the mind of Sophia. The first hint of this the took from the behaviour of the young lady in the field of battle; and the suspicion which she then conceived, was greatly corroborated by some observations which she had made that evening and the next morning. However, being greatly cautious to avoid being found in a mistake, she carried the secret a whole fortnight in her bosom, giving only some oblique hints, by simpering, winks, nods, and now and then dropping an obscure word, which indeed sufficiently alarmed Sophia, but did not at all affect her brother.

Being at length, however, thoroughly fatisfied of the truth of her observation, she took an opportunity, one morning, when she was alone with her brother, to interrupt one of his whistles in the following man-

ner.

Pray, brother, have you not observed something very extraordinary in my niece lately?' 'No, not I,' answered Western: 'Is any thing the matter with the ' girl?' 'I think there is,' replies fhe, 'and fomething of much confequence too.' 'Why, fhe doth ' not complain of any thing,' cries Western, 'and she hath had the fmall pox.' Brother,' returned fhe, girls are liable to other diffempers besides the small pox, and fometimes possibly to much worse.' Here Western interrupted her with much earnestness, and begged her, if any thing ailed his daughter, to acquaint him immediately, adding: 'fhe knew he loved her more than his own foul, and that he would fend to the world's end for the best physician to her.' Nay, nay, answered fhe, smiling, 'the distemper is not so terrible; but, I believe, brother, you are convinced I know the world, and I promife you I was never more deceived in my life, if my niece be ' not most desperately in love,' 'How, in love,' cries Western, in a passion, 'in love without acquainting 'me! I'll difinherit her, I'll turn her out of doors, flark naked, without a farthing. Is all my kindness vor 'ur, and vondness o'ur come to this, to fall ' in love without asking me leave!' 'But you will not,' answered Mrs. Western, 'turn this daughter, whom ' you love better than your own foul, out of doors. before you know whether you shall approve her ' choice. Suppose she should have fixed on the very person whom you yourself would wish, I hope you ' would not be angry then.' 'No, no,' cries Western, that would make a difference. If the marries the ' man I would ha'her, fhe may love whom fhe pleafes, 'I fhan't trouble my head about that,' That is 'fpoken,'

' fpoken,' answered the fifter, like a fensible man, but I believe the very person she hath chosen, would be the very person you would chuse for her. I will disclaim all knowledge of the world if it is not so: and I believe, brother, you will allow I have fome Why lookee, fifter,' faid Western, 'I do believe you have as much as any woman: and to be fure those are women's matters. You know I don't love to hear you talk about politics, they belong to us, and e petticoats should not meddle: but come, who is the ' man?' 'Marry!' faid fhe, 'you may find him out yourfelf, if you pleafe. You who are fo great a po-' litician, can be at no great loss. The judgment which can penetrate into the cabinets of princes, and discover the secret springs which move the great fate wheels in all the political machines of Europe, ' must furely, with very little difficulty find out what passes in the rude uninformed mind of a girl.' 'Sifter,' cries the 'fquire, 'I have often warned you not to talk the court gibberish to me. I tell you, I don't understand the lingo; but I can read a journal, or the London Evening-Post. Perhaps indeed, there ' may be now and then a verse which I can't make much of, because half the letters are left out; yet I know very well what is meant by that, and that our affairs don't go fo well as they fhould do, because of bribery and corruption.' I pity your country ignorance from my heart, cries the lady. 'Do you, answered Western, 'and I pity your town learning; I had rather be any thing than a courtier, and a prefbyterian, and a Hanoverian too, as some people, I ' believe, are.' 'If you mean me,' answered she, ' you know I am a woman, brother; and it fignifies nothing

' nothing what I am. Besides --- 'I do know you ' are a woman,' cries the 'fquire, 'and it's well for thee, that art one; if hadft been a man, I promife ' thee I had lent thee a flick long ago.' 'Ay, there,' faid she, 'in that flick lies all your fancied superiori-'ty. Your bodies, and not your brains, are stronger than ours. Believe me, it is well for you that you ' are able to beat us; or, fuch is the superiority of our understanding, we should make all of you what the brave, and wife, and witty, and polite are al-' ready,—our flaves.' 'I am glad I know your mind,' answered the 'squire, 'but we'll talk more of this matter another time. At present, do tell me what man is it you mean about my daughter.' 'Hold a moment,' faid fhe, 'while I digest that sovereign contempt I have for your fex; or elfe I ought to be angry too with you. There- I have made a fhift to gulp it down. And now, good politic Sir, what think you of Mr. Blifil? Did fhe not faint away on feeing him lie breathless on the ground? Did she not, ' after he was recovered, turn pale again the moment we came up to that part of the field where he flood? And pray what elfe should be the occasion of all her melancholy that night at fupper, the next ' morning, and indeed ever fince?' 'Fore George!' cries the 'fquire, 'now you mind me on't, I remember it all. It is certainly fo, and I am glad on't, ' with all my heart. I knew Sophy was a good girl, and would not fall in love to make me angry. I was ' never more rejoiced in my life: for nothing can lie fo handy together as our two estates. I had this matter in my head some time ago; for certainly the two 'estates are in a manner joined together in marrimony 'already,

already, and it would be a thousand pities to part them. It is true, indeed, there be larger estates in the kingdom, but not in this county, and I had rather bate fomething, than marry my daughter among ftrangers and foreigners. Befides most o'zuch great estates be in the hands of lords, and I have the very name of themmun. Well but, fifter, what would vou advise me to do: for I tell you women know ' these matters better than we do?' 'O your humble ' fervant, Sir,' answered the lady, 'we are obliged to you for allowing us a capacity in any thing. Since you are pleafed then, most politic Sir, to ask my ' advice, I think you may propose the match to Allworthy yourself. There is no indecorum in the proposal's coming from the parent of either side. King Alcinous, in Mr. Pope's Odyffey, offers his daughter to Ulysses. I need not caution so politic a person not to say that your daughter is in love; that would indeed be against all rules.' 'Well,' faid the 'fquire, 'I will propose it; but I shall cer-' tainly lend un a flick, if he should refuse me.' 'Fear not,' cries Mrs. Western, 'the match is too ' advantageous to be refused,' 'I don't know that,' answered the 'fquire. 'Allworthy is a queer b-ch, and money hath no effect o'un.' Brother,' faid the lady, 'your politics aftonish me. Are you really to be imposed on by professions? Do you think Mr. Allworthy hath more contempt for money than other men, because he professes more? Such credulity would better become one of us weak women, than that wife fex which heaven hath formed for politicians. Indeed, brother, you would make a fine ' plenipo to negociate with the French. They would · foon

'foon persuade you, that they take towns out of mere defensive principles.' 'Sister,' answered the 'squire, with much scorn, 'let your friends at court answer for the towns taken; as you are a woman, I shall lay no blame upon you: for I suppose they are wifer than to trust women with secrets.' He accompanied this with so farcastical a laugh, that Mrs. Western could bear no longer. She had been all this time fretted in a tender part (for she was indeed very deeply skilled in these matters, and very violent in them) and therefore burst forth in a rage, declared her brother to be both a clown and a blockhead, and that she would

flay no longer in his house.

The 'fquire, though perhaps he had never read Machiavel, was, however, in many points, a perfect politician. He strongly held all those wife tenets, which are fo well inculcated in that Politico-Peripatetic school of Exchange-alley. He knew the just value and only use of money, viz. to lay it up. He was likewise well skilled in the exact value of reversions, expectations, &c. and had often confidered the amount of his fifter's fortune, and the chance he or his posterity had of inheriting it. This he was infinitely too wife to facrifice to a trifling refentment. When he found, therefore, he had carried matters too far, he began to think of reconciling them; which was no very difficult talk, as the lady had great affection for her brother, and still greater for her niece; and tho' too susceptible of an affront offered to her skill in politics, on which she much valued herself, was a woman of a very extraordinary good and fweet disposition. ods an and panyle

Having first, therefore, laid violent hands on the horses, for whose escape from the stable no place but Vol. I.

the window was left open; he next applied himfelf to his fifter, foftened and foothed her, by unfaying all he had faid, and by affertions directly contrary to those which had incenfed her. Laftly, he fummoned the eloquence of Sophia to his affiftance, who befides a most graceful and winning address, had the advantage of being heard with great favour and partiality by her aunt.

The refult of the whole was a kind fmile from Mrs. Western, who said: 'Brother, you are absolutely a perfect Croat; but as those have their use in the army of the empress queen, so you likewise have fome good in you. I will therefore once more fign a treaty of peace with you, and fee that you do not infringe it on your fide; at least, as you are so excellent a politician, I may expect you will keep your leagues, like the French, till your interest calls upon you to break them.'

CHAP. III.

Containing two defiances to the critics.

THE 'fquire having fettled matters with his fifter, as we have feen in the last chapter, was so greatly impatient to communicate the proposal to Allworthy, that Mrs. Western had the utmost difficulty to prevent him from visiting that gentleman in his sickness, for this purpose.

Mr. Allworthy had been engaged to dine with Mr. Western at the time when he was taken ill. He was therefore no fooner discharged out of the custody of physic, but he thought (as was usual with him on all occasions, both the highest and the lowest) of fulfilling his engagement. I month and should total

In the interval between the time of the dialogue in the last chapter, and this day of public entertainment, Sophia had, from certain obscure hints thrown out by her aunt, collected some apprehension that the sagacious lady suspected her passion for Jones. She now resolved to take this opportunity of wiping out all such suspected, and for that purpose to put an entire constraint on her behaviour.

First, she endeavoured to conceal a throbbing melancholy heart with the utmost sprightlines in her countenance, and the highest gaiety in her manner. Secondly, she addressed her whole discourse to Mr. Bliss, and took not the least notice of poor Jones the

whole day.

The 'fquire was fo delighted with this conduct of his daughter, that he scarce eat any dinner, and spent almost his whole time in watching opportunities of conveying signs of his approbation by winks and nods to his fister; who was not at first altogether so pleafied with what she saw as was her brother.

In fhort, Sophia fo greatly overacted her part, that her aunt was at first staggered, and began to suspect some affectation in her niece; but as she was herself a woman of great art, so she semembered the was herself a woman of great art, so she remembered the many hints she had given her niece concerning her being in love, and imagined the young lady had taken this way to rally her out of her opinion, by an overacted civility; a notion that was greatly corroborated by the excessive gaiety with which the whole was accompanied. We cannot here avoid remarking that this conjecture would have been better sounded, had Sophia lived ten years in the air of Grosvenor-square, where young ladies do X 2 learn

learn a wonderful knack of rallying and playing with that passion, which is a mighty serious thing in woods

and groves an hundred miles distant from London. To fay the truth, in discovering the deceit of others, it matters much that our own art be wound up, if I may use the expression, in the same key with theirs: for very artful men fometimes milcarry by fancying others wifer, or in other words, greater knaves than they really are. As this observation is pretty deep, I will illustrate it by the following fhort story. Three & countrymen were pursuing a Wiltshire thief through Brentford. The simplest of them seeing the Wiltshire house written under a sign, advised his companions to enter it, for there most probably they would find their countryman. The fecond, who was wifer, laughed at this fimplicity, but the third, who was wifer still, answered: 'Let us go in, however, for he may think we should not suspect him of going amongst his own 'countrymen.' They accordingly went in, and fearched the house, and by that means missed overtaking the thief, who was, at that time, but a little way before them; and who, as they all knew, but had never once reflected, could not read.

The reader will pardon a digression in which so invaluable a fecret is communicated, fince every gamefler will agree how necessary it is to know exactly the play of another, in order to countermine him. This will, moreover, afford a reason why the wifer man, as is often feen, is the bubble of the weaker, and why many fimple and innocent characters are fo generally misunderstood, and misrepresented: but what is most material, this will account for the deceit which Sophia in the air off colvension of

put on her politic aunt.

11 651

Dinner

Dinner being ended, and the company retired into the garden, Mr. Western, who was thoroughly convinced of the certainty of what his fifter had told him. took Mr. Allworthy afide, and very bluntly proposed

a match between Sophia and young Mr. Blifil.

Mr. Allworthy was not one of those men, whose hearts flutter at any unexpected and fudden tidings of worldly profit. His mind was, indeed, tempered with that philosophy which becomes a man and a christian. He affected no absolute superiority to all pleasure and pain, to all joy and grief; but was not at the fame time to be discomposed and ruffled by every accidental blaft; by every finile or frown of fortune. He received, therefore, Mr. Western's propofal without any visible emotion, or without any alteration of countenance. He faid, the alliance was fuch as he fincerely wifhed, and launched forth into a very just encomium on the young lady's merit; acknowledged the offer to be advantageous in point of fortune; and after thanking Mr. Western for the good opinion he had professed of his nephew, concluded, that if the young people liked each other, he should be very defirous to complete the affair.

Western was a little disappointed at Mr. Allworthy's answer; which was not so warm as he expected. He treated the doubt, whether the young people might like one another, with great contempt; faying: 'That ' parents were the best judges of proper matches for ' their children; that, for his part, he should infift on the most refigned obedience from his daughter; ' and if any young fellow could refuse such a bed-' fellow, he was his humble fervant, and hoped there son that bac.

was no harm done.'

Allworthy endeavoured to fosten this resentment by many eulogiums on Sophia; declaring, he had no doubt but that Mr. Blisil would very gladly receive the offer: but all was ineffectual, he could obtain no other answer from the 'squire but— 'I say no more—' I humbly hope there's no harm done— that's all.' Which words he repeated at least a hundred times

before they parted.

Allworthy was too well acquainted with his neighbour to be offended at this behaviour; and though he was so averse to the rigour which some parents exercise on their children in the article of marriage, that he had resolved never to force his nephew's inclinations, he was nevertheless much pleased with the prospect of this union: for the whole country resounded the praises of Sophia, and he had himself greatly admired the uncommon endowments of both her mind and person. To which, I believe, we may add, the consideration of her vast fortune, which, though he was too sober to be intoxicated with it, he was too sensible to despise.

And here, in defiance of all the barking critics in the world, I must and will introduce a digression concerning true wisdom, of which Mr. Allworthy was in reality as great a pattern as he was of goodness.

True wisdom then, notwithstanding all which Mr. Hogarth's poor poet may have writ against riches, and in spight of all which any rich, well-fed divine may have preached against pleasure, consists not in the contempt of either of these. A man may have as much wisdom in the possession of an affluent fortune, as any beggar in the streets; or may enjoy a handsome wife or a hearty friend, and still remain as wise as any sour popish

popifh reclufe, who buries all his focial faculties, and starves his belly while he well lashes his back.

To fay truth, the wifest man is the likeliest to possess all worldly blessings in an eminent degree; for as that moderation which wisdom prescribes is the surest way to useful wealth, so can it alone qualify us to taste many pleasures. The wife man gratises every appetite and every passion, while the fool facrifices all the rest to pall and satiate one.

It may be objected, that very wife men have been notoriously avaritious. I answer: Not wife in that instance. It may likewise be faid, that the wisest men have been, in their youth, immoderately fond of pleasure. I answer: They were not wife then.

Wisdom, in short, whose lessons have been reprefented as so hard to learn by those who never were at her school, only teaches us to extend a simple maxim universally known and sollowed even in the lowest life, a little farther than that life carries it. And this is not to buy at too dear a price.

Now, whoever takes this maxim abroad with him into the grand market of the world, and conflantly applies it to honours, to riches, to pleasures, and to every other commodity which that market affords, is, I will venture to affirm, a wife man; and must be so acknowledged in the worldly sense of the word: for he makes the best of bargains; since in reality he purchases every thing at the price only of a little trouble, and carries home all the good things I have mentioned, while he keeps his health, his innocence, and his reputation, the common prices which are paid for them by others, entire and to himself.

X 4

From

From this moderation, likewise, he learns two other lessons, which complete his character. First, never to be intoxicated when he hath made the best bergain, nor dejected when the market is empty, or when its commodities are too dear for his purchase.

But I must remember on what subject I am writing, and not trespass too far on the patience of a goodnatured critic. Here, therefore, I put an end to the

chapter.

CHAP. I Visido s

Containing fundry curious matters.

A S foon as Mr. Allworthy returned home, he took Mr. Blifil apart, and, after fome preface, communicated to him the proposal which had been made by Mr. Western, and, at the same time, informed him how agreeable this match would be to himself.

The charms of Sophia had not made the least impression on Bliss; not that his heart was pre-engaged; neither was he totally insensible of beauty, or had any aversion to women; but his appetites were, by nature so moderate, that he was able, by philosophy, or by study, or by some other method, easily to subdue them; and as to that passion which we have treated of in the first chapter of this book, he had not the least tincture of it in his whole composition.

But though he was so entirely free from that mixed passion, of which we there treated, and of which the virtues and beauty of Sophia formed so notable an object, yet was he altogether as well furnished with some other passions, that promised themselves very full gratification in the young lady's fortune. Such were avarice and ambition, which divided the dominion of his mind

mind between them. He had more than once confidered the possession of this fortune as a very desirable thing, and had entertained some distant views concerning it: but his own youth and that of the young lady, and indeed principally a reflection that Mr. Western might marry again, and have more children, had restrained him from too hasty or eager a pursuit.

This last and most material objection was now in great measure removed, as the proposal came from Mr. Western himself. Blissl, therefore, after a very short hesitation, answered Mr. Allworthy, that matrimony was a subject on which he had not yet thoughts but that he was so sensible of his friendly and fatherly care, that he should in all things submit himself to

his pleafure, and and bedomedth had the good A

1-

Allworthy was naturally a man of spirit, and his present gravity arose from true wisdom and philosophy, not from any original phlegm in his disposition: for he had possessed much fire in his youth, and had married a beautiful woman for love. He was not, therefore, greatly pleased with this cold answer of his nephew; nor could he help launching forth into the praises of Sophia, and expressing some wonder that the heart of a young man could be impregnable to the force of such charms, unless it was guarded by some prior affection.

Blifil affured him he had no fuch guard; and then proceeded to discourse so wisely and religiously on love and marriage, that he would have stopt the mouth of a parent much less devoutly inclined than was his uncle. In the end, the good man was satisfied that his nephew, far from having any objections to Sophia, had that esteem for her, which in sober and virtuous

X

minds

brita

minds is the fure foundation of friendship and love. And as he doubted not but the lover would, in a little time, become altogether as agreeable to his mistress, he foresaw great happiness arising to all parties by so proper and desirable an union. With Mr. Blifil's consent, therefore, he wrote the next morning to Mr. Western, acquainting him that his nephew had very thankfully and gladly received the proposal, and would be ready to wait on the young lady, whenever she should be pleased to accept his visit.

Western was much pleased with this letter, and immediately returned an answer; in which, without having mentioned a word to his daughter, he appointed that very afternoon for opening the scene of courts hip.

As foon as he had dispatched this messenger, he went in quest of his sister, whom he found reading and expounding the Gazette to parson Supple. To this exposition he was obliged to attend near a quarter of an hour, though with great violence to his natural impetuosity, before he was suffered to speak. At length however, he found an opportunity of acquainting the lady, that he had business of great consequence to impart to her; to which she answered: 'Brother, I am' entirely at your service. Things look so well in the 'North that I was never in a better humour,'

The parson then withdrawing, Western acquainted her with all which had passed, and desired her to communicate the affair to Sophia, which she readily and chearfully undertook; though perhaps her brother was a little obliged to that agreeable northern aspect which had so delighted her, that he heard no comment on his proceedings; for they were certainly somewhat too hasty and violent.

CHAP.

Book VI.

CHAP. V. styl a bilguod

In which is related what paffed between Sophia and her aunt.

COPHIA was in her chamber reading, when her aunt came in. The moment fhe faw Mrs. Weftern, fhe flut the book with fo much eagerness, that the good lady could not forbear asking her, what book that was which fhe feemed fo much afraid of fhewing? 'Upon my word, Madam,' answered Sophia, 'it is a book which I am neither ashamed nor afraid to own I have read. It is the production of a young ' lady of fashion, whose good understanding, I think, doth honour to her fex, and whose good heart is an honour to human nature. Mrs. Western then took up the book, and immediately after threw it down. faying: - 'Yes, the author is of a very good fami-'ly; but she is not much among people one knows. 'I have never read it; for the best judges say, there is not much in it.' 'I dare not, Madam, fet up my 'own opinion,' fays Sophia, 'against the best judges, but there appears to me a great deal of human nature 'in it: and in many parts, fo much true renderness and delicacy, that it hath cost me many a tear. Ay, and do you love to cry then?' fays the aunt. 'I love a tender fenfation,' answered the niece, 'and would pay the price of a tear for it at any time.' 'Well, but fhew me,' faid the aunt, 'what was you reading when I came in; there was fomething very tender in that, I believe, and very loving too. You blush, my dear Sophia. Ah! child, you should read books which would teach you a little hypo-' crify, which would instruct you how to hide your 4 thoughts

' thoughts a little better.' 'I hope, Madam,' anfwered Sophia, 'I have no thoughts which I ought to , be all hamed of discovering.' 'As hamed! no,' cries the aunt, 'I don't think you have any thoughts which you ought to be afhamed of; and yet, child, you bluf hed just now when I mentioned the word Loving. Dear Sophy, be affured you have not one thought which I am not well acquainted with; as well, child, as the French are with our motions, long before we put them in execution. Did you think, child, because you have been able to impose upon your father, that you could impose upon me? Do you imagine I did not know the reason of your over-acting all that friendship for Mr. Blifil yesterday? I have seen a little too much of the world, to be so deceived. Nay, nay, do not blufh again. I tell you it is a passion you need not be as hamed of. - It is a pasfion I myself approve, and have already brought your father into the approbation of it. Indeed I folely confider your inclination; for I would always have that gratified, if possible, though one may facrifice higher prospects. Come, I have news which will delight your very foul. Make me your confident, and I will undertake you fhall be happy to the 'very extent of your wishes.' 'La, Madam,' fays Sophia, looking more foolifhly than ever fhe did in her life. "I know not what to fay. - Why, Madam, fhould you suspect? - Nay, no dishonesty, returned Mrs. Western. Consider, you are speaking to one of your own fex, to an aunt, and I hope you are convinced you fpeak to a friend. Confider, you are only revealing to me what I know already, and what I plainly faw yesterday through that most artthoughts

n

0

u

u

d

t-

ul

ful of all disguises which you had put on, and which must have deceived any one who had not perfeetly known the world. Lastly, consider it is a paffion which I highly approve.' 'La, Madam,' fays Sophia, 'you come upon one fo unawares, and on a fudden. To be fure, Madam, I am not blind, - and certainly, if it be a fault to fee all human ' perfections affembled together.— But is it possible my father and you, Madam, can fee with my eyes? 'I tell you,' answered the aunt, 'we do entirely ' approve; and this very afternoon your father hath appointed for you to receive your lover?' 'My father, this afternoon!' cries Sophia, with the blood starting from her face - 'Yes, child,' faid the aunt, 'this afternoon. You know the impetuofity of my brother's temper. I acquainted him with the passion which I first discovered in you that even-'ing when you fainted away in the field. I faw it in your fainting. I faw it immediately upon your recovery. I faw it that evening at supper, and the next morning at breakfaft: (you know, child, I have feen the world.) Well, I no fooner acquainted my brother, but he immediately wanted to propose it to Allworthy. He proposed it yesterday, Allworthy confented, (as to be fure he must with joy) and this afternoon, I tell you, you are to put on all your best airs.' 'This afternoon!' cries Sophia. Dear aunt, you frighten me out of my senses.' 'O, my dear, faid the aunt, 'you will foon come to yourfelf again; for he is a charming young fellow, that's the truth on't.' 'Nay, I will own,' fays Sophia, I know none with fuch perfections. So brave, and yet fo gentle; fo witty, yet fo inoffenfive; fo ' humane,

humane, fo civil, fo genteel, fo handsome! What ' fignifies his being base born, when compared with fuch qualifications as these?' 'Base born! what do you mean?' faid the aunt, 'Mr. Blifil base born!' Sophia turned inflantly pale at this name, and faintly repeated it. Upon which the aunt cried: 'Mr. Blifil, ' av. Mr. Blifil, of whom elfe have we been talking?' Good heaven, answered Sophia, ready to fink, of Mr. Jones I thought; I am fure I know no other who deferves—' I protest,' cries the aunt, 'vou frighten me in your turn. Is it Mr. Jones, and not Mr. Blifil, who is the object of your affection?' ' Mr. Blifil!' repeated Sophia: 'Sure it is impoffible you can be in earnest; if you are, I am the most ' miserable woman alive.' Mrs. Western now stood a few moments filent, while sparks of fiery rage flashed from her eyes. At length collecting all her force of voice. The thundered forth in the following inarticulate founds.

'And is it possible you can think of disgracing your family by allying yourself to a bastard? Can the blood of the Westerns submit to such contamination! If you have not sense sufficient to restrain fuch monstrous inclinations, I thought the pride of our family would have prevented you from giving the least encouragement to so base an affection:

the least encouragement to so base an affection; much less did I imagine you would ever have had the assurance to own it to my face. 'Madam,' answered Sophia, trembling, 'what I have said you have extorted from me. I do not remember to have ever mentioned the name of Mr. Jones, with approbation, to any one before; nor should I now, had I not conceived he had had your 'ap-

f

u

t

d

of

n

1-

in

of

ng

n;

·I

e-

Ir.

or

ur

ap-

approbation. Whatever were my thoughts of that opoor unhappy young man, I intended to have carried them with me to my grave. To that grave where only now, I find, I am to feek repose. -Here the funk down in her chair, drowned in her tears. and in all the moving filence of unutterable grief. presented a spectacle which must have affected almost the hardest heart. an som sagum

All this tender forrow, however, raifed no compassion in her aunt. On the contrary, she now fell into the most violent rage. - 'And I would rather.' the cried in a most vehement voice, 'follow you to your grave, than I would fee you diffrace yourfelf and your family by fuch a match. O heavens! could I have ever suspected that I should live to hear a niece of mine declare a passion for such a sellow? You ' are the first, - yes, Miss Western, you are the first of your name who ever entertained fo grovelling a thought. A family fo noted for the prudence of its women.'- Here she run on a full quarter of an hour, till having exhausted her breath rather than her rage, fhe concluded with threatening to go immediately and acquaint her brother.

Sophia then threw herfelf at her feet, and laying hold of her hands, 'begged her, with tears, to con-' ceal what she had drawn from her; urging the vio-' lence of her father's temper, and protesting that no 'inclinations of hers should ever prevail with her to

do any thing which might offend him.'

Mrs. Western stood a moment looking at her, and then having recollected herself, said: 'That on one confideration only the would keep the fecret from her brother; and this was, that Sophia fhould pro-

' mife

' mife to entertain Mr. Blifil that very afternoon as ' her lover, and to regard him as the person who was ' to be her hus band.'

Poor Sophia was too much in her aunt's power to deny her any thing positively; she was obliged to promise that she would see Mr. Blissl, and be as civil to him as possible; but begged her aunt that the match might not be hurried on. She said, 'Mr. Blissl was by no means agreeable to her, and she hoped her

father would be prevailed on not to make her the

" most wretched of women."

Mrs. Western assured her: 'That the match was en'tirely agreed upon, and that nothing could or should
'prevent it.' 'I must own,' said she, 'I looked on
'it as a matter of indifference; nay, perhaps, had
'fome scruples about it before, which were actually
'got over by my thinking it highly agreeable to your
'own inclinations; but now I regard it as the most
'eligible thing in the world; nor shall there be, if
'I can prevent it, a moment of time lost on the oc'casion.'

Sophia replied: 'Delay at least, Madam, I may expect from both your goodness and my father's.

Surely you will give me time to endeavour to get the better of fo strong a disinclination as I have at pre-

fent to this person.

The aunt answered: 'She knew too much of the 'world to be so deceived; that as she was sensible another man had her affections, she should persuade

Mr. Western to hasten the match as much as possible.

It would be bad politics indeed,' added fhe, 'to protract a fiege when the enemy's army is at hand, and in danger of relieving it. No, no, Sophy,' faid

in danger of relieving it. No, no, Sophy, laid

f

e

le

oid

e,

The, 'as I am convinced you have a violent passion, 'which you can never satisfy with honour, I will do all I can to put your honour out of the care of your family; for when you are married, those matters will belong only to the consideration of your husband. I hope, child, you will always have prudence enough to act as becomes you; but if you should not, marriage hath saved many a woman from ruin.'

Sophia well understood what her aunt meant: but did not think proper to make her an answer. However, she took a resolution to see Mr. Bliss, and to behave to him as civilly as she could; for on that condition only she obtained a promise from her aunt to keep secret the liking which her ill fortune, rather than any scheme of Mrs. Western, had unhappily drawn from her.

CHAP. VI.

Containing a dialogue between Sophia and Mrs. Honour, which may a little relieve those tender affections, which the foregoing scene may have raised in the mind of a good-natured reader.

RS. Western having obtained that promise from her niece which we have seen in the last chapter, withdrew; and presently after arrived Mrs. Honour. She was at work in a neighbouring apartment, and had been summoned to the key-hole by some vociferation in the preceding dialogue, where she had continued during the remaining part of it. At her entry into the room, she found Sophia standing mover. I.

Book VI.

alphaeu

tionless, with the tears trickling from her eyes. Upon which she immediately ordered a proper quantity of tears into her own eyes, and then began: 'O ge-' mini, my dear lady, what is the matter?' 'Nothing,' cries Sophia, 'Nothing! O dear Madam,' answers Mrs. Honour, 'you must not tell me that, when your I ladyfhip is in this taking, and when there hath been fuch a preamble between your ladyfhip and Madam 'Western.' 'Don't teaze me,' cries Sophia, 'I tell you nothing is the matter. Good heavens! why ' was I born!'- 'Nay, Madam,' fays Mrs. Honour, vou shall never persuade me, that your la'ship can ' lament yourself so for nothing. To be sure, I am but a fervant; but to be fure I have been always faithful to your la'fhip, and to be fure I would ferve your la'fhip with my life.' 'My dear Honour,' fays Sophia, 'tis not in thy power to be of any fer-' vice to me. I am irretrievably undone.' 'Heaven ' forbid,' answered the waiting-woman, 'but if I can't be of any fervice to you, pray tell me, Madam, it will be some comfort to me to know: pray, dear ' Ma'am, tell me what's the matter.' 'My father,' cries Sophia, 'is going to marry me to a man I both despise and hate.' 'O dear Ma'am,' answered the other, 'who is this wicked man? for to be fure he is vary bad, or your la'fhip would not despise him.' His name is poison to my tongue, replied Sophia, ' thou wilt know it too foon.' Indeed, to confess the truth, fhe knew it already, and therefore was not very inquifitive as to that point. She then proceeded thus: I don't pretend to give your la'fhip advice, whereof von la'fhip knows much better than I can pretend to, being but a fervant; but, i-fackins! no father in a series

2

ır

n

m

11

ny

lr,

an

m

lys

ıld ır,

er

en n't

it

ear er,

oth

the

he

m.

hia,

the

ery

ius:

reof

end

ther in in England fhould marry me against my confent. And to be fure, the 'fquire is fo good, that if he did but know your la'fhip despites and hares the young man, to be fure he would not defire you to marry him. And if your la'fhip would but give me leave to tell my mafter fo. To be fure, it would be more properer to come from your own mouth; but as your la'fhip doth not care to foul your tongue with his nafty name.' 'You are mistaken, Honour,' fays Sophia, 'my father was determined before he ever thought fit to mention it to me.' 'More fhame for ' him,' cries Honour, 'you are to go to bed to him, and not mafter. And thof a man may be a very proper man, yet every woman mayn't think him handfome alike. I am fure my mafter would never act in this manner of his own head. I wish some people would trouble themselves only with what belongs to ' them; they would not, I believe, like to be ferved ' so, if it was their own case; for though I am a ' maid, I can easily believe as how all men are not ' equally agreeable. And what fignifies your la'fhip ' having so great a fortune, if you can't please your-' felf with the man you think most handsomest? Well, I fay nothing, but to be fure it is pity fome folks ' had not been better born; nay, as for that matter, 'I should not mind it myself; but then there is not so ' much money, and what of that? Your la'fhip hath ' money enough for both; and where can your la'fhip bestow your fortune better? For to be sure every one must allow, that he is the most handsomest, 'charmingest, finest, tallest, properest man in the 'world.' 'What do you mean by running on in ' this manner to me!' cries Sophia with a very grave Y 2 count-

ma

dif

vex

der

qua

he i

countenance. Have I ever given any encourage-' ment for these liberties?' 'Nay, Ma'am, I alk ' pardon; I meant no harm,' answered she: 'but to be fure the poor gentleman hath run in my head ever fince I faw him this morning. To be fure, if 'your la'ship had but seen him just now, you must have pitied him. Poor gentleman! I wishes some ' misfortune hath not happened to him; for he hath been walking about with his arms across, and looking so melancholy all this morning; I vow and pro-' test it made me almost cry to see him.' 'To see 'whom?' fays Sophia. 'Poor Mr. Jones,' answered Honour. 'See him! why, where did you fee him?' cries Sophia. 'By the canal, Ma'am,' fays Honour. There he hath been walking all this morning, and at last there he laid himself down; I believe he lies there still. To be sure, if it had not been for my ' modesty, being a maid, as I am, I should have gone and spoke to him. Do, Ma'am, let me go and see, only for a fancy, whether he is there still. 'Pugh!' fays Sophia, 'there! no, no, what should he do there? He is gone before this time to be fure. Befides, why what why fhould you go to fee? - Besides, I want you for something else. Go, fetch me my hat and gloves. I fhall walk with my aunt in the grove before dinner. Honour did immediately as fhe was bid, and Sophia put her hat on; when looking in the glass, she fancied the ribbon with which her hat was tied, did not become her, and to fent her maid back again for a ribbon of a different colour; and then giving Mrs. Honour repeated charges not to leave her work on any account, as fhe faid it was in violent hafte, and must be finished that very day;

d

e

r.

y

0

0,

y

1;

h

0

es

it

y

day; The muttered fomething more about going to the grove, and then fallied out the contrary way, and walked, as fast as her tender trembling limbs could

carry her, directly towards the canal.

Jones had been there, as Mrs. Honour had told her: he had indeed spent two hours there that morning in melancholy contemplation on his Sophia, and had gone out from the garden at one door, the moment she entered it at another. So that those unlucky minutes which had been spent in changing the ribbons, had prevented the lovers from meeting at this time: a most unfortunate accident, from which my fair readers will not fail to draw a very wholesome lesson. And here I strictly forbid all male critics to intermeddle with a circumstance, which I have recounted only for the sake of the ladies, and upon which they are only at liberty to comment.

CHAP. VII.

A picture of formal courtship in miniature, as it always ought to be drawn, and a scene of a tenderer kind, painted at full length.

IT was well remarked by one, (and perhaps by more) that misfortunes do not come fingle. This wife maxim was now verified by Sophia, who was not only disappointed of seeing the man she loved, but had the vexation of being obliged to dress herself out, in order to receive a visit from the man she hated.

That afternoon Mr. Western, for the first time, acquainted his daughter with his intention; telling her he knew very well that she had heard it before from

Y 3

her

1

0

her aunt. Sophia looked very grave upon this, nor could fhe prevent a few pearls from stealing into her eyes. 'Come, come,' says Western, 'none of your 'maidenish airs; I know all; I assure you sister hath told me all.'

'Is it possible,' says Sophia, 'that my aunt can have betrayed me already?' 'Ay, ay,' says Western, 'betrayed you! ay. Why you betrayed your felf yesterday at dinner. You shewed your fancy 'very plainly, I think. But you young girls never

know what you would be at. So you be because I am going to marry you to the man you are in love

with! Your mother, I remember, whimpered and

whined just in the same manner; but it was all over within twenty-four hours after we were married:

Mr. Blifil is a brifk young man, and will foon put an end to your fqueamifhness. Come, chear up, chear

up, I expect un every minute.'

Sophia was now convinced that her aunt had behaved honourably to her; and she determined to go through that disagreeable afternoon with as much resolution as possible, and without giving the least suppicion in the world to her father.

Mr. Blifil foon arrived; and Mr. Western soon after withdrawing, left the young couple together.

Here a long filence of near a quarter of an hour enfued: for the gentleman who was to begin the conversation had all that unbecoming modesty which confists in bashfulness. He often attempted to speak, and as often suppressed his words just at the very point of unterance. At last out they broke in a torrent of far-fetched and high-strained compliments, which were answered on her side, by downcast looks, half bows,

r

d

er

m

ar

a-,

07

eif-

af-

ur

n.

n-

ak,

int of

ich ialf

WS,

bows, and civil monofyllables. Blifil from his inexperience in the ways of women, and from his conceit of himself took this behaviour for a modest affent to his court hip; and when, to shorten a scene which she could no longer support, Sophia rose up and left the room, he imputed that too merely to bashfulness, and comforted himself that he should soon have enough of her company.

He was indeed perfectly well fatisfied with his profpect of fuccess; for as to that entire and absolute posfession of the heart of his mistress, which romantic lovers require, the very idea of it never entered his head.

Her fortune and her person were the sole objects of his wishes, of which he made no doubt soon to obtain the absolute property; as Mr. Western's mind was so earnestly bent on the match, and as he well knew the strict obedience which Sophia was always ready to pay to her father's will, and the greater still which her father would exact, if there was occasion. This authority, therefore, together with the charms which he fancied in his own person and conversation, could not fail, he thought, of succeeding with a young lady, whose inclinations were, he doubted not, entirely disengaged.

Of Jones he certainly had not even the least jealoufy; and I have often thought it wonderful that he had not. Perhaps he imagined the character which Jones bore all over the country, (how justly let the reader determine) of being one of the wildest fellows in England, might render him odious to a lady of the most exemplary modesty. Perhaps his suspicions might be laid as leep by the behaviour of Sophia, and of Jones himself, when they were all in company to

Y 4 gether.

gether. Lastly, and indeed principally, he was well affured there was not another felf in the cafe. He fancied that he knew Jones to the bottom, and had in reality a great contempt for his understanding, for not being more attached to his own interest. He had no apprehension that Jones was in love with Sophia; and as for any lucrative motives, he imagined they would fway very little with fo filly a fellow. Blifil, moreover, thought the affair of Molly Seagrim still went on, and indeed believed it would end in marriage: for Jones really loved him from his childhood, and had kept no fecret from him, 'till his behaviour on the fickness of Mr. Allworthy had entirely alienated his heart; and it was by means of the quarrel which had enfued on this occasion, and which was not yet reconciled, that Mr. Blifil knew nothing of the alteration which had happened in the affection which Jones had formerly borne towards Molly.

From these reasons, therefore, Mr. Blisil saw no bar to his success with Sophia. He concluded, her behaviour was like that of all other young ladies on a first visit from a lover, and it had indeed entirely an-

fwered his expectations.

Mr. Western took care to way-lay the lover at his exit from his mistress. He found him so elevated with his success, so enamoured with his daughter, and so satisfied with her reception of him, that the old gentleman began to caper and dance about his hall, and by many other antic actions, to express the extravagance of his joy; for he had not the least command over any of his passions: and that which had at any time the ascendant in his mind, hurried him to the wildest excesses.

0

d

d H,

2-

nd

14

ne

As

As foon as Blifil was departed, which was not till after many hearty kiffes and embraces bestowed on him by Western, the good 'squire went instantly in quest of his daughter, whom he no sooner found than he poured forth the most extravagant raptures, bidding her chuse what clothes and jewels she pleased; and declaring that he had no other use for fortune but to make her happy. He then caressed her again and again with the utmost profusion of sondness, called her by the most endearing names, and protested she was

his only joy on earth.

Sophia perceiving her father in this fit of affection, which fhe did not absolutely know the reason of (for fits of fondness were not unusual to him, though this was rather more violent than ordinary) thought fhe fhould never have a better opportunity of disclosing herself than at present; as far at least, as regarded Mr. Blifil; and the too well forefaw the necessity which fhe fhould foon be under of coming to a full explana-After having thanked the 'fquire therefore for all his professions of kindness, the added, with a look full of inexpressible softness: 'And is it possible my papa can be fo good to place all his joy in his Sophy's happines?' which Western having confirmed by a great oath, and a kiss; she then-laid hold of his hand, and falling on her knees, after many warm and passionate declarations of affection and duty, she begged him, 'not to make her the most miserable creature on earth, by forcing her to marry a man whom ' she detested. This I intreat of you, dear Sir,' faid The, 'for your fake as well as my own, fince you are ' fo very kind to tell me your happiness depends on 'mine.' 'How! what!' fays Western, staring wildly. Y 5

"O Sir,' continued fhe, 'not only your poor Sophy's ' happiness; her very life, her being depends upon ' your granting her request. I cannot live with Mr. Blifil. To force me into this marriage would be 'killing me.' 'You can't live with Mr. Blifil!' fays Western. 'No, upon my foul, I can't,' answered Sophia. 'Then die and be d-ned,' cries he, fourning her from him. 'Oh! Sir,' cries Sophia, catching hold of the fkirt of his coat, 'take pity on me, I befeech you. Don't look, and fay fuch cruel-Can ' you be unmoved while you fee your Sophy in this dreadful condition? Can the best of fathers break my heart? Will he kill me by the most pain-' ful, cruel, lingering death?' 'Pooh! pooh!' cries the 'fquire, 'all stuff and nonsense, all maidenish tricks. Kill you indeed! Will marriage kill you?'-"Oh! Sir,' answered Sophia, "fuch a marriage is worse than death— He is not even indifferent, I hate ' and detest him.'- 'If you detest un never so much,' cries Western, 'you shall ha'un.' This he bound by an oath too shocking to repeat, and after many violent affeverations, concluded in these words: 'I am re-' folved upon the match, and unless you confent to it, 'I will not give you a groat, not a fingle farthing; on, though I faw you expiring with famine in the ffreet, I would not relieve you with a morfel of bread. This is my fixed refolution, and fo I leave ' you to consider on it.' He then broke from her with fuch violence, that her face dashed against the floor, and he burst directly out of the room, leaving poor Sophia proftrate on the ground.

Jones; who feeing his friend looking wild, pale, and almost

almost breathless, could not forbear enquiring the reason of all these melancholy appearances. Upon which the squire immediately acquainted him with the whole matter, concluding with bitter denunciations against Sophia, and very pathetic lamentations of the misery of all fathers who are so unfortunate to have

daughters.

d

d

Jones, to whom all the resolutions which had been taken in favour of Blifil were yet a secret, was at first almost struck dead with this relation; but recovering his spirits a little, mere despair, as he afterwards said, inspired him to mention a matter to Mr. Western, which seemed to require more impudence than a human forehead was ever gisted with. He desired leave to go to Sophia, that he might endeavour to obtain her concurrence with her father's inclinations.

If the 'squire had been as quick-sighted, as he was, remarkable for the contrary, passion might at present very well have blinded him. He thanked Jones for offering to undertake the office, and said: 'Go, go, 'prithee, try what canst do;' and then swore many execrable oaths that he would turn her out of doors

unless fhe consented to the march.

CHAP. VIII.

The meeting between Jones and Sophia.

JONES departed instantly in quest of Sophia, whom he found just risen from the ground where her father had left her, with the tears trickling from her eyes, and the blood running from her lips. He presently ran to her, and with a voice sull at once of tenderness and terrour, cried: 'O my Sophia, what means this dreadful sight!'— She looked softly at him for

for a moment before fhe fpoke, and then faid: 'Mr. fones, for heaven's fake how came you here? -Leave me, I befeech you, this moment.' Do ' not,' fays he, 'impose so harsh a command upon' me-my heart bleeds fafter than those lips. O Sobhia, how eafily could I drain my veins to preferve one drop of that dear blood.' I have too many obligations to you already, answered she, for fure ' you meant them fuch.'-Here I he looked at him tenderly almost a minute, and then bursting into an agony, cried: "O Mr, Jones, why did you fave my ' life? - my death would have been happier for us ' both.' - 'Happier for us both!' cried he: 'Could racks or wheels kill me fo painfully as Sophia's - I cannot bear the dreadful found— Do I live but for her?' - Both his voice and look were full of inexpreffible tenderness when he spoke these words, and at the fame time he laid gently hold on her hand, which fhe did not withdraw from him; to fay the truth, fhe hardly knew what she did or suffered. A few moments now passed in filence between these lovers, while his eyes were eagerly fixed on Sophia, and hers declining towards the ground; at last she recovered strength enough to desire him again to leave her; for that her certain ruin would be the consequence of their being found together; adding: "O Mr. Jones, you 4 know not, you know not what hath passed this cruel ' afternoon.' I know all, my Sophia, answered he; your cruel father hath told me all, and he himself hath ' fent me hither to you.' 'My father fent you to me!' replied fhe, 'fure you dream.' 'Would to heaven,' cries he, 'it was but a dream. O Sophia, your fa-' ther hath fent me to you, to be an advocate for my odious

odious rival, to folicit you in his favour- I took any means to get access to you - O speak to me, Sophia, comfort my bleeding heart. Sure no one ever loved, ever doated like me. Do not unkindly with-hold this dear, this foft, this gentle hand - One moment, perhaps, tears you for ever from me-Nothing less than this cruel occasion, could, I believe, have ever conquered the respect and awe, with which ' you have inspired me.' She stood a moment silent, and covered with confusion, then lifting up her eyes gently towards him, The cried: 'What would Mr. Jones have me fay?' 'O do but promise,' cries he, that ' you will never give yourself to Blifil.' 'Name not,' answered she, 'the detested found. Be affured I never will give him what is in my power to with-hold from 'Now then,' cries he, 'while you are fo perfectly kind, go a little farther, and add that I 'may hope.' - 'Alas,' fays fhe, 'Mr. Jones, whither ' will you drive me? What hope have I to bestow? you know my father's intentions' - 'But I know,' answered he, 'your compliance with them cannot be 'compelled.' 'What,' fays fhe, 'must be the dread-' ful confequence of my disobedience? My own ruin is my least concern. I cannot bear the thoughts of being the cause of my father's misery.' He is himfelf the cause,' cries Jones, 'by exacting a power over you which nature hath not given him. Think on the mifery which I am to fuffer, if I am to lose you, and fee on which fide pity will turn the balance.' 'Think of it!' replied fhe, 'can you imagine I do not feel the ruin which I must bring on ' you, should I comply with your defire- It is that ' thought which gives me resolution to bid you fly from 'me

' me for ever, and avoid your own destruction.' 'I fear no destruction,' cries he, 'but the loss of Sophia;

' if you would fave me from the most bitter agonies,

recal that cruel fentence- 'Indeed, I can never part

with you, indeed I cannot.'

The lovers now stood both filent and trembling, Sophia being unable to withdraw her hand from Jones, and he almost as unable to hold it; when the scene, which I believe some of my readers will think had lasted long enough, was interrupted by one of so different a nature, that we shall reserve the relation of it for a different chapter.

CHAP. IX.

Being of a much more tempestuous kind than the former.

BEFORE we proceed with what now happened to our lovers, it may be proper to recount what had past in the hall, during their tender interview.

Soon after Jones had left Mr. Western in the manner above-mentioned, his fister came to him; and was presently informed of all that had past between her

brother and Sophia, relating to Blifil.

This behaviour in her niece the good lady confirmed to be an absolute breach of the condition, on which she had engaged to keep her love for Mr. Jones a secret. She considered herself, therefore, at full liberty to reveal all she knew to the squire, which she immediately did in the most explicit terms, and without any ceremony or preface.

The idea of a marriage between Jones and his daughter, had never once entered into the 'fquire's head

d

n

nc

es

ıll

he th-

his

e's

ad,

head, either in the warmest minutes of his affection towards that young man, or from suspicion, or on any other occasion. He did indeed consider a parity of fortune and circumstances, to be physically as necessary an ingredient in marriage, as differences of sexes, or any other essential; and had no more apprehension of his daughter's falling in love with a poor man, than with any animal of a different species.

He became, therefore, like one thunder-struck at his sister's relation. He was, at first, incapable of making any answer, having been almost deprived of his breath by the violence of the surprize. This, however, soon returned, and, as is usual in other cases after an intermission, with redoubled force and surv.

The first use he made of the power of speech, after his recovery from the sudden essects of his astonishment, was to discharge a round volly of oaths and imprecations. After which he proceeded hastily to the apartment, where he expected to find the lovers, and murmured, or indeed, rather roared forth intentions

of revenge every step he went.

As when two doves, or two wood-pigeons, or as when Strephon and Phyllis (for that comes nearest to the mark) are retired into some pleasant solitary grove, to enjoy the delightful conversation of love; that bashful boy who cannot speak in public, and is never a good companion to more than two at a time; here while every object is serene, should hoarse thunder burst suddenly through the shattered clouds, and rumbling roll along the sky, the frightened maid starts from the mostly bank or verdant turs; the pale livery of death succeeds the red regimentals in which love had before dress her cheeks; fear shakes her whole frame,

frame, and her lover scarce supports her trembling,

tottering limbs.

Or as when the two gentlemen, strangers to the wonderous wit of the place, are cracking a bottle together at some inn or tavern at Salisbury, if the great Dowdy who acts the part of a madman, as well as some of his setters-on do that of a fool, should rattle his chains, and dreadfully hum forth the grumbling catch along the gallery; the frighted strangers stand aghast, scared at the horrid sound, they seek some place of shelter from the approaching danger and if the well-barred windows did admit their exit, would venture their necks to escape the threatning sury now coming upon them.

So trembled poor Sophia, so turned she pale at the noise of her father, who in a voice most dreadful to hear, came on swearing, cursing and vowing the destruction of Jones. To say the truth, I believe the youth himself would, from some prudent considerations, have preferred another place of abode at this time, had his terror on Sophia's account given him liberty to reflect a moment on what any otherwise concerned himself; than as his love made him partake whatever

affected her.

And now the 'squire having burst open the door, beheld an object which instantly suspended all his sury against Jones; this was the ghastly appearance of Sophia, who had fainted away in her lover's arms. This tragical sight Mr. Western no sooner beheld, than all his rage for sook him, he roared for help with his utmost violence; ran first to his daughter, then back to the door, calling for water, and then back again to Sophia, never considering in whose arms she then was

nor

P

e

To

H

f

e

0

9.

e

1-

e,

ty

er

or,

is

ce

ns.

an

his

ack

to

125,

nor

nor perhaps once recollecting that there was fuch a person in the world as Jones: for, indeed, I believe, the present circumstances of his daughter were now the sole consideration which employed his thoughts.

Mrs. Western and a great number of servants soon came to the assistance of Sophia with water, cordials, and every thing necessary on those occasions. These were applied with such success, that Sophia in a very few minutes began to recover, and all the symptoms of life to return. Upon which she was presently led off by her own maid and Mrs. Western; nor did that good lady depart without leaving some wholesome admonitions with her brother, on the dreadful effects of his passion, or, as she pleased to call it, madness.

The 'squire, perhaps, did not understand this good advice, as it was delivered in obscure hints, shrugs, and notes of admiration; at least, if he did understand it, he profited very little by it; for no sooner was he cured of his immediate fears for his daughter, than he relapsed into his former frenzy, which must have produced an immediate battle with Jones, had not parson Supple, who was a very strong man, been present, and by mere force restrained the 'squire from acts of hostility.

The moment Sophia was departed, Jones advanced in a very suppliant manner to Mr. Western, whom the parson held in his arms, and begged him to be pacified; for that, while he continued in such a passion, it would be impossible to give him any satisfaction.

'I wull have fatisfaction o'thee, answered the 'squire, 'so doff thy clothes. At unt half a man, and 'I'll lick thee as well as wast ever licked in thy life.' He then bespattered the youth with abundance of that Vol, I,

language, which passes between country gentlemen who embrace opposite sides of the question; with frequent applications to him to salute that part which is generally introduced into all controversies, that arise among the lower orders of the English gentry, at horse-races, cock-matches, and other public places. Allusions to this part are likewise often made for the sake of the jest. And here, I believe the wit is generally misunderstood. In reality, it lies in desiring another to kiss your a— for having just before threatened to kick his: for I have observed very accurately, that no one ever desires you to kick that which belongs to himself, nor offers to kiss this part in another.

It may likewise seem surprizing, that in the many thousand kind invitations of this fort, which every one who hath conversed with country gentlemen must have heard, no one, I believe, hath ever seen a single in stance where the desire has been complied with. A great instance of their want of politeness: for in town, nothing can be more common than for the finest gentleman to perform this ceremony every day to their superiors, without having that favour once requested

of them

To all fuch wit, Jones very calmly answered: 'Si, this usage may, perhaps, cancel every other obliga-

that post is

C

ar

CC

n

ha

be

be

fer

a n

tha

tion you have conferred on me; but there is one you

can never cancel; nor will I be provoked by your abuse, to lift my hand against the father of Sophia.

At these words the 'squire grew still more outrage out than before; so that the parson begged Jones we retire, saying: 'You, behold, Sir, how he waxed wroth at your abode here; therefore let me pray you

* nor to tarry any longer. His anger is too much king and the

S

e

It

e

ig

at-

igs

ny

ne

in-

A

wn, en-

heir

fted

Sir,

liga-

you

your a.

rage es to

exeth

y you

i kin-

dled

dled for you to commune with him at present. You

had better, therefore, conclude your vifit, and refer

" what matters you have to urge in your behalf to

fome other opportunity. alto on his moderatio and

Jones accepted this advice with thanks, and immediately departed. The 'squire now regained the liberty of his hands, and so much temper as to express some satisfaction in the restraint which had been laid upon him; declaring that he should certainly have beat his brains out; and adding: 'It would have vexed one consoundedly to have been hanged for such a rascal.'

The parson now began to triumph in the success of his peace-making endeavours, and proceeded to read a lecture against anger, which might perhaps rather have tended to raise than to quiet that passion in some hasty minds. This lecture he enriched with many valuable quotations from the ancients, particularly from Seneca; who hath, indeed, so well handled this passion, that none but a very angry man can read him without great pleasure and prosit. The doctor concluded this harangue with the samous story of Alexander and Clitus; but as I find that entered in my common place under the title Drunkenness, I shall not insert it here.

The 'squire took no notice of this story, nor perhaps of any thing he said: for he interrupted him before he had finished, by calling for a tankard of beer; observing (which is perhaps as true as any observation on this sever of the mind) that anger makes

a man dry.

No fooner had the fquire fwallowed a large draught than he renewed the discourse on Jones, and declared a Z 2 resoluresolution of going the next morning early to acquaint Mr. Allworthy. His friend would have diffuaded him from this, from the mere motive of good-nature; but his diffusion had no other effect than to produce a large volley of oaths and curses, which greatly shocked the pious ears of Supple; but he did not dare to remonstrate against a privilege which the 'squire claimed as a free-born Englishman. To say truth, the parson submitted to please his palate at the squire's table, at the expence of fuffering now and then this violence to his ears. He contented himself with thinking he did not promote this evil practice, and that the 'fguire would not fwear an oath the less, if he never entered within his gates. However, though he was not guilty of ill manners by rebuking a gentleman in his own house, he paid him off obliquely in the pulpit; which had not, indeed, the good effect of working a reformation in the 'fquire himself; yet it so far operated on his conscience, that he put the laws very feverely in execution against others, and the magistrate was the only person in the parish who could swear with impunity.

CHAP. X.

In which Mr. Western visits Mr. Allworthy.

R. Allworthy was now retired from breakfall with his penhew well fried with his nephew, well fatisfied with the report of the young gentleman's fuccessful visit to Sophia, (for he greatly defired the match, more on account of the young lady's character than of her riches) when Mr. Western broke abruptly in upon them, and without any ceremony began as follows. refoht-

There,

6

There, you have done a fine piece of work truly. ' You have brought up your baffard to a fine purpose; not that I believe you have had any hand in it neither, that is, as a man may fay, defignedly; but there is a fine kettle of fish made on't up at our 'house.' 'What can be the matter, Mr. Western?' faid Allworthy. O matter enow of all conscience; my daughter has fallen in love with your baffard, ' that's all; but I won't ge her a ha'penny, not the twentieth part of a brass varden. I always thought ' what would become o'breeding up a bastard like a ' gentleman, and letting un come about to vok's houses. Its well vor un I could not get at un, I'd à ' lik'd un, I'd a spoil'd his caterwauling, I'd a taught the fon of a whore to meddle with meat for his mafler. He flan't ever have a morfel of meat of mine, or a varden to buy it: If the will ha un, one finock, ' fhall be her portion, I'll fooner ge my estate to the zinking fund, that it may be fent to Hanover to corrupt our nation with.' I am heartily forry, cries Allworthy. 'Pox o'your forrow,' fays Western, 'it will do me abundance of good, when I have loft my ' only child, my poor Sophy, that was the joy of my ' heart, and all the hope and comfort of my age; but 'I am refolved I will turn her out o' doors; fhe fhall beg and starve, and rot in the streets. Not one hapenny, not a hapenny shall she ever hae o' mine. The fon of a bitch was always good at finding a hare fitting; and be rotted to'n I little thought what puss he was looking after; but it shall be the worst he 'ever yound in his life. She shall be no better than ' carrion; the Ikin o'er is all he fhall ha, and zu you ' may tell un.' I am in amazement,' cries Allworthy,

ere,

t

IS

n

e-

ry

te

ar

1.

fast

ort

hia,

t of

hen

ith-

thy, 'at what you tell me, after what paffed between my nephew and the young lady no longer ago than ' vesterday.' 'Yes Sir,' answered Western, 'it was after what paffed between your nephew and the that the whole matter came out. Mr. Blifil there was no fooner gone than the fon of a whore came lurching about the house. Little did I think, when I used to love him for a sportsman, that he was all the while a poaching after my daughter. Why, truly, Bays Allworthy, 'I could wish you had not given him fo many opportunities with her; and you will do me the justice to acknowledge, that I have always been saverse to his staying so much at your house, though Lown I had no suspicion of this kind, Why, 'zounds!' cries Western, 'who could have thought it? What the devil had fhe to do win? He did not came there a courting to her; he came there a hunt ing with me,' But was it possible,' fays Allwor thy, that you should never discern any symptoms of ! love between them, when you have feen them to often 'together?' 'Never in my life, as I hope to be faved' cries Western, 'I never so much as zeed him kis her in all my life; and fo far from courting her, he used rather to be more filent when she was in company than at any other time; and as for the girl, ' The was always less civil to'n than to any young man that came to the house. As to that matter, I am not more easy to be deceived than another; I would not have you think I am, neighbour.' worthy could scarce refrain laughter at this; but he refolved to do a violence to himfelf: for he perfectly well knew mankind, and had too much good breeding and good nature to offend the 'fquire in his prefent cirt

S

e

n

18

en

th

y,

ht

ot

11-

1

of

en

d, is

he

m-

irl,

ing , I

1

he Alv

ed-

fent circircumftances. He then asked Western what he would have him do upon this occasion. To which the other answered: 'That he would have him keep the rascal 'away from his house, and that he would go and 'lock up the wench; for he was resolved to make 'her marry Mr. Blisil in spite of her teeth.' He then shook Blisil by the hand, and swore he would have no other son-in-law. Presently after which he took his leave, saying, his house was in such disorder, that it was necessary for him to make haste home, to take care his daughter did not give him the slip; and as for Jones, he swore, if he caught him at his house, he would qualify him to run for the gelding's plate.

When Allworthy and Blifil were again left together, a long filence enfued between them; all which interval the young gentleman filled up with fighs, which proceeded partly from disappointment, but more from hatred: for the success of Jones was much more grie-

yous to him than the loss of Sophia.

At length his uncle asked him what he was determined to do, and he answered in the following words. Alas, Sir, can it be a question what step a lover will take, when reason and passion point different ways? I am afraid it is too certain he will, in that dilemma, always follow the latter. Reason dictates to me to quit all thoughts of a woman who places her affections on another; my passion bids me hope she may, in time, change her inclinations in my favour. Here, however, I conceive an objection may be raised, which, if it could not fully be answered, would totally deter me from any farther pursuit. I mean the injustice of endeavouring to supplant another in a heart, of which he feems already in posses-Z 4 fion;

fion; but the determined resolution of Mr. Western ' Thews, that, in this case, I shall, by so doing, promote the happiness of every party; not only that of the parent, who will thus be preserved from the higheft degree of misery, but of both the others, who must be undone by this match. The lady, I am fure, will be undone in every fense; for, besides the los of most part of her own fortune, she will be not only married to a beggar, but the little fortune which her father cannot with-hold from her, will be fquandered on that wench, with whom I know he yet converses.— Nay, that is a trifle: for I know him to be one of the worst men in the world: for had my dear uncle known what I have hitherto endea-' voured to conceal, he must have long since abandoned fo profligate a wretch.' 'How, faid Allworthy, hath he done any thing worfe than I already know? "Tell me, I befeech you." 'No,' replied Blifil, 'it is now past, and perhaps he may have repented of 'it.' 'I command you on your duty,' faid Allworthy, 'to tell me what you mean.' You know, 'Sir,' fays Blifil, 'I never disobeyed you; but I am forry I mentioned it, fince it may now look like revenge, whereas, I thank heaven, no fuch motive ever entered my heart; and if you oblige me to difcover it, I must be his petitioner to you for your for giveness.' I will have no conditions, answered Allworthy, 'I think I have fhewn tenderness enough towards him, and more perhaps than you ought to thank me for.' 'More, indeed, I fear than he deferved,' cries Blifil; for, in the very day of your ' utmost danger, when myself and all the family were in tears, he filled the house with riot and debauche

h

n

d

2-

nº

y,

1?

it

of

r

W.

m

e.

ve

:0-

Dr-

ed

to

de-

out

ere

he-

ry.

ry. He drank, and fung, and roared; and when I gave him a gentle hint of the indecency of his actions, he fell into a violent paffion, fwore many oaths, ' called me a rascal, and struck me.' 'How!' cries Allworthy, 'did he dare to ftrike you?' 'I am fure,' cries Blifil; 'I have forgiven him that long ago. I wish I could so easily forget his ingratitude to the best of benefactors; and yet, even that I hope you will forgive him, fince he must have certainly been ' possessed with the devil: for that very evening, as Mr. Thwackum and myself were taking the air in the fields, and exulting in the good fymptoms which ' then first began to discover themselves, we unluckily ' faw him engaged with a wench in a manner not fit to be mentioned. Mr. Thwackum, with more boldness than prudence, advanced to rebuke him, when (I am forry to fay it) he fell upon the worthy man, and beat him fo outrageoufly, that I wish he may have yet recovered the bruifes. Nor was I without my fhare of the effects of his malice, while I endeavoured to protect my tutor; but that I have long forgiven; nay, I prevailed with Mr. Thwackum to forgive him too, and not to inform you of a fecret which I feared might be fatal to him. And now, Sir, fince I have unadvifedly dropped a hint of this matter, and your commands have obliged me to discover the whole, let me intercede with you for him.' 'O child,' faid Allworthy. 'I know not whether I should blame or applaud your goodness in concealing such villany a moment: but where is Mr. Thwackum? Not that I want any confirmation of what you fay; but I will examine all the evidence of this matter, to justify to the 2 5 world

plion ,

world the example I am resolved to make of such a monster.'

Thwackum was now fent for, and presently appeared. He corroborated every circumstance which the other had deposed; nay, he produced the record upon his breast, where the hand-writing of Mr. Jones remained very legible in black and blue. He concluded with declaring to Mr. Allworthy, that he should have long since informed him of this matter, had not Mr. Blish, by the most earnest interpositions, prevented him. 'He is,' says he, 'an excellent youth; thought such forgiveness of enemies is carrying the matter too far.'

In reality, Blifil had taken some pains to prevail with the parson, and to prevent the discovery at that time; for which he had many reasons. He knew that the minds of men are upt to be foftened and relaxed from their usual severity by sickness. Besides, he imagined that if the flory was told when the fact was fo recent, and the physician about the house, who might have unravelled the real truth, he should never be able to give it the malicious turn which he intended. Again, he resolved to hoard up this business, till the indiscretion of Jones should afford some additional complaints; for he thought the joint weight of many facts falling upon him together, would be the most likely to crush him; and he watched therefore fome fuch opportunity as that with which fortune had now kindly presented him. Laftly, by prevailing with Thwackum to conceal the matter for a time, he knew he should confirm an opinion of his friendship to Jones, which he had greatly laboured to establish in Mr. Allworthy. as all the contenes of this matter, to julity to the

CHAR

t

1

n

Ph

e

W

be

th

pa

an

. (

his

tio

en

thi

des

no

bro

to the pion and GHAP with XI with the will bloom

A short chapter; but which contains sufficient matter to affect the good natured reader.

TT was Mr. Allworthy's custom never to punish any one, not even to turn away a fervant, in a passion. He refolved therefore to delay passing sentence on Jones till the afternoon. A discourse in Alaska leadorou '

il

at

at

ed

13-

fo ht

ole

in,

re-

ts;

ing

1sh nity

ted

onirm

had

10

E. AP.

The poor young man attended at dinner, as ufual; but his heart was too much loaded to fuffer him to eat. His grief too was a good deal aggravated by the unkind looks of Mr. Allworthy; whence he concluded that Western had discovered the whole affair between him and Sophia: but as to Mr. Blifil's flory, he had not the least apprehension: for of much the greater part he was entirely innocent; and for the refidue, as he had forgiven and forgotten it himself, so he suspected no remembrance on the other side. When dinner was over, and the fervants departed, Mr. Allworthy began to harangue. He fet forth, in a long speech, the many iniquities of which Jones had been guilty, particularly those which this day had brought to light; and concluded, by telling him: ! That unless he could ' clear himself of the charge, he was resolved to ba-' nish him out of his sight for ever.'

Many disadvantages attended poor Jones in making his defence: nay, indeed, he hardly knew his accusation: for as Mr. Allworthy, in recounting the drunkenness, &c. while he lay ill, out of modesty funk every thing that related particularly to himself, which indeed principally constituted the crime; Jones could not deny the charge. His heart was, befides, almost broken already; and his spirits were so sunk, that he

could

could fay nothing for himself; but acknowledged the whole, and, like a criminal in despair; threw himself upon mercy; concluding: 'That though he must own himself guilty of many follies and inadvertencies, he

hoped he had done nothing to deferve what would

be to him the greatest punishment in the world.'
Allworthy answered: 'That he had forgiven him

' too often already, in compassion to his youth, and 'in hopes of his amendment: that he now found he, was an abandoned reprobate, and such as it would

be criminal in/any one to support and encourage

' Nay,' faid Mr. Allworthy to him, 'your audacion' attempt to fleal away the young lady, calls upon m

to justify my own character in punif hing you. The world, who have already centured the regard I have

fhewn for you, may think, with some colour at least

of justice, that I connive at fo base and barbarous an

'action. An action of which you must have known my abhorrence; and which, had you any concern

a

k

10

T

th

fu

CC

W

ag

na

for my ease and honour, as well as for my friendship,

you would never have thought of undertaking. Fit

'upon it, young man! indeed there is scarce any pu

inifhment equal to your crimes, and I can fcarce think myself justifiable in what I am now going to bestow

on you. However, as I have educated you like a

child of my own, I will not turn you naked into the

world. When you open this paper, therefore, you

' will find fomething which may enable you, with in-

dustry, to get an honest livelihood; but if you em-

' ploy it to worse purposes, I shall not think myles

obliged to supply you farther, being resolved, from

this day forward, to converse no more with you on

any account. I cannot avoid faying, there is no part

11.

he

elf

Vn.

he

ıld

对话 首 2 是 好 对 自

IVE

aft

an

WI ern

ip,

Fie

DUink

OW

e a the

rou

in-

em-

telf

om

on no

part

part of your conduct which I refent more than your 'ill treatment of that good young man (meaning

Blifil) who hath behaved with fo much tenderness

and honour towards you.'

These last words were a dose almost too bitter to be fwallowed. A flood of dears now gufhed from the eyes of Jones, and every faculty of speech and motion feemed to have deferred him. It was some time before he was able to obey Allworthy's peremptory commands of departing; which he at length did, having first kissed his hands with a passion difficult to be affected, and as difficult to be described.

The reader must be very weak, if, when he confiders the light in which Jones then appeared to Mr. Allworthy, he should blame the rigour of his fentence. And yet all the neighbourhood, either from this weakness, or from some worse motive, condemned this justice and feverity as the highest cruelty. Nay, the very persons who had before confured the good man for the kindness and tenderness shewn to a bastard (his own, according to the general opinion) now cried out as loudly against turning his own child out of doors. The women especially were unanimous in taking the part of Jones, and raised more stories on the occasion than I have room, in this chapter, to fet down.

One thing must not be omitted, that in their cenfures on this occasion, none ever mentioned the fum contained in the paper which Allworthy gave Jones, which was no less than five hundred pounds; but all agreed that he was fent away pennylefs, and fome faid

naked from the house of his inhuman father.

CHAP. XII.

Containing love-letters, &c.

JONES was commanded to leave the house immediately, and told, that his clothes and every thing else should be fent to him whithersoever he should order them.

He accordingly fet out, and walked above a mile, not regarding, and indeed scarce knowing whither he went. At length a little brook obstructing his passage, he threw himself down by the side of it; not could he help muttering, with some little indignation: 'Sure my father will not deny me this place to 'rest in?'

Here he presently fell into the most violent agonies, tearing his hair from his head, and using most other actions which generally accompany fits of madness,

rage, and despair.

When he had in this manner vented the first emotions of passion, he began to come a little to himself. His grief now took another turn, and discharged itself in a gentler way, till he became at last cool enough to reason with his passion, and to consider what steps were proper to be taken in his deplorable condition.

And now the great doubt was, how to act with regard to Sophia. The thoughts of leaving her almost rent his heart asunder; but the consideration of reducing her to ruin and beggary still racked him, if possible, more; and if the violent desire of possessing her person, could have induced him to listen one moment to this alternative, still he was by no means certain of her resolution to indulge his wishes at so high an expence. The resentment of Mr. Allworthy, and

e. lg ld

e,

16

10

2.

to

es,

0 16

elf

to

re

re.

oft

re-

if

ng

10-

er-

igh

ind the

'Cruel

the injury he must do to his quiet, argued strongly against this latter; and lastly, the apparent impossibility of his fuccefs, even if he would facrifice all thefe confiderations to it, came to his affiftance; and thus honour at last, backed with despair, with gratitude to his benefactor, and with real love to his miftrefs, got the better of burning defire, and he refolved rather

to quit Sophia than to pursue her to her ruin.

It is difficult for any who have not felt, to conceive the glowing warmth which filled his breaft on the first contemplation of this victory over his passion. Pride flattered him to agreeably, that his mind perhaps enjoyed perfect happiness; but this was only momentary; Sophia foon returned to his imagination, and allayed the joy of his triumph with no less bitter pangs than a good-natured general must feel, when he furveys the bleeding heaps, at the price of whose blood . he hath purchased his laurels; for thousands of tender ideas lay murdered before our conqueror.

Being refolved, however, to purfue the paths of this giant Honour, as the gigantic poet Lee calls it, he determined to write a farewel letter to Sophia; and accordingly proceeded to a house not far off, where being furnished with proper materials, he wrote as

MADAM,

W/HEN you reflect on the fituation in which I Write, I am fure your good-nature will pardon any inconfiftency or abfurdity which my letter contains; for every thing here flows from a heart fo full, that no language can express its dictates.

'I have refolved, Madam, to obey your commands, ' in flying for ever from your dear, your lovely fight.

' Cruel indeed those commands are; but it is a cruel-

ty which proceeds from fortune, not from my Sophia. Fortune hath made it necessary, necessary

to your preservation, to forget there ever was such

a wretch as I am.

'Believe me, I would not hint all my fufferings to you, if I imagined they could possibly escape your

ears. I know the goodness and tenderness of your

heart, and would avoid giving you any of those pains which you always feel for the miserable. 0

'let nothing, which you shall hear of my hard for

tune, cause a moment's concern; for after the loss

of you, every thing is to me a trifle.

'O Sophia! it is hard to leave you; it is harder still to defire you to forget me; yet the fincerest love

obliges me to both. Pardon my conceiving that any remembrance of me can give you disquiet; but

if I am so gloriously wretched, facrifice me every

way to your relief. Think I never loved you: of think truly how little I deferve you; and learn to

forn me for a prefumption which can never be too

' feverely punif hed .- I am unable to fay more may

' guardian angels protect you for ever.'

He was now fearching his pockets for his wax, but found none, nor indeed any thing elfe, therein; for in truth he had, in his frantic disposition, toffed every thing from him, and among the rest, his pocket-book, which he had received from Mr. Allworthy, which he had never opened, and which now first occurred to his memory.

la

P

an

Bl

P

for

The house supplied him with a wafer for his present purpose, with which having sealed his letter, he returned hastily towards the brook side, in order to search -

to

ır

ur se

0

of alcoholic

HI

ve hat

out

ery

or

to

nay

but

for

ery

ook

1 he

his

fent

rearch

for

for the things which he had there loft. In his way he met his old friend Black George, who heartily condoled with him on his misfortune: for this had already reached his ears, and indeed those of all the

neighbourhood.

Jones acquainted the game-keeper with his lofs, and he as readily went back with him to the brook, where they fearched every tuft of grass in the meadow, as well where Jones had not been, as where he had been; but all to no purpose, for they found nothing: for indeed, though the things were then in the meadow, they omitted to search the only place where they were deposited: to wit, in the pockets of the said George: for he had just before found them, and being luckily apprised of their value, had very carefully put them up for his own use.

The game-keeper having exerted as much diligence, in quest of the lost goods, as if he had hoped to find them, desired Mr. Jones to recollect if he had been in no other place: 'For sure,' said he, 'if you had lost 'them here so lately, the things must have been here 'still; for this is a very unlikely place for any one to 'pass by;' and indeed it was by great accident that he himself had passed through that field, in order to lay wires for hares, with which he was to supply a

poulterer at Bath the next morning.

Jones now gave over all hopes of recovering his loss, and almost all thoughts concerning it, and turning to Black George, asked him earnestly, if he would do him

the greatest favour in the world?

George answered with some hesitation: 'Sir, you' know you may command me whatever is in my power, and I heartily wish it was in my power to Vol. I. A " 'do

' do you any fervice.' In fact, the question staggered him; for he had, by selling game, amassed a pretty good sum of money in Mr. Western's service, and was afraid that Jones wanted to borrow some small matter of him; but he was presently relieved from his anxiety, by being desired to convey a letter to Sophia, which with great pleasure he promised to do. And indeed I believe there are few favours which he would not have gladly conferred on Mr. Jones; for he bore as much gratitude towards him as he could, and was as honest as men, who love money better than any other thing in the universe, generally are.

Mrs. Honour was agreed by both to be the proper means by which this letter should pass to Sophia. They then separated; the game-keeper returned home to Mr. Western's, and Jones walked to an alehouse at half a mile's distance, to wait for his messenger's return.

George no sooner came home to his master's house, than he met with Mrs. Honour; to whom, having first sounded her with a few previous questions, he delivered the letter for her mistress, and received at the same time another from her for Mr. Jones; which Honour told him she had carried all that day in her bosom, and began to despair of finding any means of delivering it.

The game-keeper returned haftily and joyfully to Jones, who having received Sophia's letter from him inftantly withdrew, and eagerly breaking it open, read

as follows:

SIR,

IT is impossible to express what I have felt fince I saw you. Your submitting, on my account, to such cruel insults from my father, lays me under an

fuch cruel infults from my father, lays me under an obligation

obligation I shall ever own. As you know his temper, I beg, you will, for my sake, avoid him. I

wish I had any comfort to fend you; but believe this

that nothing but the last violence shall ever give my

hand or heart where you would be forry to fee them

bestowed.

Jones read this letter a hundred times over, and kiffed it a hundred times as often. His paffion now brought all tender defires back into his mind. He repented that he had writ to Sophia in the manner we have feen above; but he repented more that he had made use of the interval of his messenger's absence to write and dispatch a letter to Mr. Allworthy, in which he had faithfully promifed and bound himfelf to quit all thoughts of his love. However, when his cool reflections returned, he plainly perceived that his case was neither mended nor altered by Sophia's biller, unless to give him some little glimpse of hope from her constancy, of some favourable accident hereafter. He therefore refumed his refolution, and taking leave of Black George, fet forward to a town about five miles distant, whither he had defired Mr. Allworthy, unless he pleased to revoke his sentence, to send his things after him.

bed; yes he say no account of the said (belowed); there by he saids as accord from Aram Albanam and white he was the said the country the below the country the below the beautiful the country the beautiful the be

· Consuc line then and I are restricted to piece the terms of the the the terms of the terms of

don't and the sent of several part of the second

CHAP. XIII.

The behaviour of Sophia on the present occasion; which none of her sex will blame, who are capable of behaving in the same manner. And the discussion of a knotty point in the court of conscience.

SOPHIA had passed the last twenty sour hours in no very desirable manner. During a large part of them she had been entertained by her aunt, with lectures of prudence, recommending to her the example of the polite world, where love (so the good lady said) is at present entirely laughed at, and where women consider matrimony, as men do offices of public trust, only as the means of making their fortunes, and of advancing themselves in the world. In commenting on which text Mrs. Western had displayed her eloquence during several hours.

These sagacious lectures, though little suited either to the taste or inclination of Sophia, were, however, less irksome to her than her own thoughts, that formed the entertainment of the night, during which she

never once closed her eyes.

But though she could neither sleep nor rest in her bed; yet, having no avocation from it, she was found there by her father at his return from Allworthy's, which was not till past ten o'clock in the morning. He went directly up to her apartment, opened the door, and seeing she was not up,—cried:—'Oh!' you are safe then, and I am resolved to keep you so.' He then locked the door, and delivered the key to Honour, having first given her the strictest charge, with

with great promifes of rewards for her fidelity, and most dreadful menaces of punishment, in case she Should betray her trust.

Honour's orders were not to fuffer her mistress to come out of her room without the authority of the 'fquire himself, and to admit none to her but him and her aunt; but fhe was herfelf to attend her with what ever Sophia pleafed, except only pen, ink, and paper, of which the was forbidden the use.

The 'fquire ordered his daughter to dress herself and attend him at dinner; which fhe obeyed; and having fat the usual time, was again conducted to her prison.

In the evening, the gaoler Honour brought her the letter which she received from the game-keeper. Sophia read it very attentively twice or thrice over, and then threw herfelf upon the bed, and burff into a flood of tears. Mrs. Honour expressed great aftonishment at this behaviour in her mistres; nor could The forbear very eagerly begging to know the cause of this passion. Sophia made her no answer for some time, and then ffarting fuddenly up, caught her maid by the hand, and cried: O Honour! I am undone. 'Marry forbid,' cries Honour, 'I wish the letter had been burnt before I had brought it to your la'fhip. 'I'm fure I thought it would have comforted your ' la'fhip, or I would have feen it at the devil before I 'would have touched it.' 'Honour,' fays Sophia, ' you are a good girl, and it is in vain to attempt con-' cealing longer my weakness from you; I have ' thrown away my heart on a man who hath for-' faken me.' 'And is Mr. Jones,' answered the maid, ' fuch a perfidy man?' He has taken his leave of 'me,' fays Sophia, 'for ever in that letter. Nay,

Aa 3

he hath defired me to forget him. Could he have defired that, if he had loved me? Could he have borne fuch a thought? Could he have written fuch 'a word?' 'No certainly, Ma'am,' cries Honour, and to be fure, if the best man in England was to defire me to forget him, I'd take him at his word. Marry come up! I am fure your la'fhip hath done him too much honour ever to think on him. A young lady who may take her choice of all the young " men in the country. - And to be fure, if I may be fo prefumptuous as to offer my poor opinion, there is young Mr. Blifil, who befides that he is come of honest parents, and will be one of the greatest 'squires 'all hereabouts, he is to be fure, in my poor opinion, a more handsomer, and a more politer man by half; and besides, he is a young gentleman of a sober character, and who may defy any of the neighbours to fay black is his eye: he follows no dirty trollops, onor can any baftards be laid at his doors. Forget him, indeed! I thank heaven I myfelf am not fo " much at my last prayers, as to fuffer any man to bid • me forget him twice. If the best he that wears a head was for to go for to offer to fay fuch an affront-' ing word to me, I would never give him my company afterwards, if there was another young man in the ' kingdom. And as I was faying, to be fure there is ' young Mr. Blifil.'- 'Name not his detefted name.' cries Sophia. 'Nay, Ma'am,' fays Honour, 'if your · la'ship doth not like him, there be more jolly handfome young men that would court your la'fhip, if they had but the least encouragement. I don't be-· lieve there is arrow young gentleman in this country, or in the next to it, that if your la'fhip was but to

· look

0

e

4

e

ıf

1,

T

rs

S,

et

6

id

a

t-

14

10

is

ur

d-

if

e.

y,

to

ok

' look as if you had a mind to him, would not come about to make his offers directly.' 'What a wretch' dost thou imagine me, cries Sophia, by affronting my ears with fuch stuff! I detest all mankind. Nay, to be fure, Ma'am,' answered Honour, 'your' ' la'fhip hath had enough to give you a furfeit of them. To be used ill by such a poor beggarly bastardly 'fellow.' 'Hold your blasphemous tongue,' cries Sophia, 'how dare you mention his name with difrespect before me? He use me ill! No, his poor bleeding heart fuffered more when he writ the cruel words, , than mine from reading them. O! he is all heroic ' virtue, and angelic goodness. I am asham'd of the weakness of my own passion, for blaming what I ought to admire- O Honour! it is my good only which he confults. To my interest he sacrifices both ' himself and me. The apprehension of ruin-'ing me hath driven him to despair.' I am very glad, fays Honour, 'to hear your la'fhip takes that into your ' confideration: for to be fure it must be nothing less than ruin, to give your mind to one that is turned 'out of doors, and is not worth a farthing in the world.' 'Turned out of doors,' cries Sophia hastily, 'how! ' what dost thou mean?' 'Why, to be fure, Ma'am, my mafter no fooner told 'fquire Allworthy about 'Mr. Jones having offered to make love to your la'fhip, ' than the 'fquire stripped him stark naked, and turn-'ed him out of doors.' 'Ha!' fays Sophia. 'I have been the curfed, wretched cause of his destruction? -Turned naked out of doors! Here Honour, take all the money I have; take the rings from my fingers .- Here my watch, carry him all .- Go find him 'immediately.' 'For heaven's fake, Ma'am,' an-Aa 4

fwered Mrs. Honour, 'do but consider, if my master 's should miss any of these things, I should be made to 'answer for them. Therefore let me beg your la'ship 'not to part with your watch and jewels. Besides 'the money, I think, is enough of all conscience; 'and as for that, my master can never know any thing 'of the matter.' 'Here, then,' cries Sophia, 'take 'every farthing I am worth, find him out immediately 'and give it him. Go, go, lose not a moment.'

Mrs. Honour departed according to orders, and finding Black George below stairs, delivered him the purse which contained sixteen guineas, being indeed the whole stock of Sophia: for though her father was very liberal to her, she was much too generous to be rich.

Black George having received the purse, set forward towards the alehouse; but in the way a thought occurred to him, whether he should not detain this money likewise. His conscience, however, immediately flarted at this fuggestion, and began to upbraid him with ingratitude to his benefactor. To this his avarice answered: 'That his conscience should have considered the matter before, when he deprived poor Jones of his 500 l. That having quietly acquiefced in what ' was of fo much greater importance, it was abfurd, ' if not downright hypocrify, to affect any qualms at 'this trifle.' In return to which, conscience, like a good lawyer, attempted to diffinguish between an abfolute breach of truft, as here where the goods were delivered, and a bare concealment of what was found, as in the former case. Avarice presently treated this with ridicule, called it a diffinction without a difference, and abfolutely infifted, that when once all pretentions of honour and virtue were given up in any one instance, that . 3

e

d

y

d

.

at

d,

e.

d, is

e,

that there was no precedent for reforting to them upon a fecond occasion. In short, poor conscience had certainly been defeated in the argument, had not fear stept in to her assistance, and very strenuously urged, that the real distinction between the two actions did not lie in the different degrees of honour, but of safety: for that the secreting the 500 l. was a matter of very little hazard; whereas the detaining the sixteen guineas was liable to the utmost danger of discovery.

By this friendly aid of fear, conscience obtained a compleat victory in the mind of Black George, and after making him a few compliments on his honesty,

forced him to deliver the money to Jones.

CHAP. XIV.

A short chapter, containing a short dialogue between squire Western and his sister.

RS. Western had been engaged abroad all that IVI day. The 'squire met her at her return home; and when the enquired after Sophia, he acquainted her that he had fecured her fafe enough. 'She is "locked up in chamber,' cries he, 'and Honour ' keeps the key.' As his looks were full of prodigious wisdom and fagacity when he gave his fifter this information, it is probable he expected much applause from her for what he had done; but how was he disappointed! when with a most disdainful aspect, The cried: 'Sure, brother, you are the weakest of all ' men. Why will you not confide in me for the ma-' nagement of my niece? Why will you interpole? ' you have now undone all that I have been spending my breath in order to bring about. While I have Aa s

been endeavouring to fill her mind with maxims of prudence, you have been provoking her to reject them. English women, brother, I thank heaven, ' are no flaves. We are not to be locked up like the ' Spanish and Italian wifes. We have as good a right to liberty as yourselves. We are to be convinced by reason and persuasion only, and not governed by force. I have feen the world, brother, and know what arguments to make use of; and if your folly had onot prevented me, should have prevailed with her to form her conduct by those rules of prudence and discretion which I formerly taught her.' 'To be sure,' faid the 'fquire, 'I am always in the wrong.' 'Bro-· ther,' answered the lady, 'You'are not in the wrong, unless when you meddle with matters beyond your knowledge. You must agree, that I have seen most of the world; and happy had it been for my niece, ' if fhe had not been taken from under my care. It is by living at home with you that fhe hath learnt ro-' mantic notions of love and nonfenfe.' 'You don't 'imagine, I hope,' cries the 'fquire, 'that I have taught her any fuch things.' 'Your ignorance, brother, returned fhe, 'as the great Milton fays, 'almost subdues my patience.' 'D-n Milton,' answered the 'squire, 'if he had the impudence to say ' fo to my face, I'd lend him a doufe, thof he was ' never fo great a man. Patience! as you come to ' that, fifter, I have more occasion of patience, to be ' used like an overgrown school-boy; as I am by you. Do you think no one hath any understanding, unless he hath been about to court? Pox! the world is

^{*} The reader may perhaps subdue his own patience, if he fearches for this in Milton.

of

d

come to a fine pass indeed, if we are all fools, except a parcel of round-heads and Hanover rats. Pox! I hope the times are a coming that we shall make foois of them, and every man shall enjoy his own. That's all, fifter, and every man fhall enjoy his own, I hope to zee it, fifter, before the Hanover rats have eat up all our corn, and left us nothing but turneps to feed upon.' I protest, brother, cries fhe, 'you are now got beyond my understanding. Your jargon of turneps and Hanover rats is to me ' perfectly unintelligible.' 'I believe,' cries he, 'you ' don't care to hear o'em; but the country interest ' may fucceed one day or other for all that. ' wifh,' answered the lady, 'you would think a little of your daughter's interest: for believe me, fhe is in greater danger than the nation.' 'Just now,' faid he, 'you chid me for thinking on her, and would * ' ha' her left to you.' 'And if you will promife to ' interpose no more,' answered she, 'I will out of my ' regard to my niece, undertake the charge.' 'Well 'do then,' faid the 'fquire, 'for you know I always agreed, that women are the properest to manage ' women.'

Mrs. Western then departed, muttering something with an air of disdain, 'concerning women and management of the nation. 'She immediately repaired to Sophia's apartment, who was now, after a day's confinement, released again from her captivity.

necessary of the second filter man govern

HISTORY

OF A

FOUNDLING.

BOOK VII.

Containing three days.

CHAP. I.

A comparison between the World and the Stage.

HE world hath often been compared to the theatre; and many grave writers, as well as the poets, have confidered human life as a great drama, refembling, in almost every particular, those scenical representations, which Thespis is first reported to have invented, and which have been fince received with so much approbation and delight in all polite countries.

This thought hath been carried to far, and is become so general, that some words proper to the theatre, and which were at first metaphorically applied to the world, are now indiscriminately and literally spoken of both: thus stage and scene are by common use

grown

S

a,

re

e.

to

ofe

vn

grown as familiar to us, when we speak of life in general, as when we confine ourselves to dramatic performances; and when transactions behind the curtain are mentioned, St. James's is more likely to occur to

our thoughts than Drury-Lane.

It may feem easy enough to account for all this, by reflecting that the theatrical stage is nothing more than a representation, or, as Aristotle calls it, an imitation of what really exists; and hence, perhaps, we might fairly pay a very high compliment to those, who by their writings or actions have been so capable of imitating life, as to have their pictures in a manner confounded with, or mistaken for the originals.

But, in reality, we are not so fond of paying compliments to these people, whom we use as children frequently do the instruments of their amusement; and have much more pleasure in hissing and buffeting them, than in admiring their excellence. There are many other reasons which have induced us to see this

analogy between the world and the flage,

Some have considered the larger part of mankind in the light of actors, as personating characters no more their own, and to which, in fact, they have no better title, than the player hath to be in earnest thought the king or emperor whom he represents. Thus the hypocrite may be said to be a player; and indeed the Greeks called them both by one and the same name.

The brevity of life hath likewise given occasion to this comparison. So the immortal Shakespear:

____ Life's a poor player,

That struts and frets his hour upon the stage, And then is heard no more.

For which hackneyed quotation, I will make the reader amends by a very noble one, which few, I believe, have read. It is taken from a poem called the DEITY, published about nine years ago, and long fince buried in oblivion: a proof that good books no more than good men do always survive the bad:

From thee * all human actions take their fprings,
The rife of empires and the fall of kings!
See the VAST THEATRE OF TIME display'd,
While o'er the scene succeeding heroes tread!
With pomp the shining images succeed,
What leaders triumph, and what monarchs bleed!
Perform the parts thy providence assign'd,
Their pride, their passions, to thy ends inclin'd:
A while they glitter in the face of day,
Then at thy nod the phantoms pass away;
No traces lest of all the busy scene,
But that remembrance says— The Things have
BEEN!

In all these, however, and in every other similitude of life to the theatre, the resemblance hath been always taken from the stage only. None, as I remember, have at all considered the audience at this great drama.

But as nature often exhibits some of her best performances to a very full house; so will the behaviour of her spectators no less admit the above-mentioned comparison than that of her actors. In this vast theatre of time are seated the friend and the critic; here are claps and shouts, hisses and groans; in short, every thing which was ever seen or heard at the Theatre-royal.

W

^{*} The DEITY,

Let us examine this in one example: for instance, in the behaviour of the great audience on that scene which nature was pleased to exhibit in the 12th chapter of the preceding book, where she introduced Black George running away with the 500 l. from his friend and benefactor.

Those who sat in the world's upper gallery, treated that incident, I am well convinced, with their usual vociferation; and every term of scurrilous reproach

was most probably vented on that occasion.

If we had descended to the next order of spectators, we should have found an equal degree of abhorrence, though less of noise and scurrility; yet here the good women gave Black George to the devil, and many of them expected every minute that the cloven-sooted

gentleman would fetch his own.

The pit, as usual, was no doubt divided: those who delight in heroic virtue and perfect character, objected to the producing such instances of villany, without punishing them very severely for the sake of example. Some of the author's friends cry'd— 'Look'ee, gentlemen, the man is a villain: but it is nature for all that.' And all the young critics of the age, the clerks, apprentices, &c. called it low, and fell a groaning.

As for the boxes, they behaved with their accustomed politenets. Most of them were attending to something else. Some of those few who regarded the scene at all, declared he was a bad kind of man; while others refused to give their opinion, till they had heard

that of the best judges.

Now we, who are admitted behind the scenes of this great theatre of nature, (and no author ought to write any thing besides dictionaries and spelling-books

who

who hath not this privilege) can censure the action, without conceiving any absolute detestation of the person, whom perhaps nature may not have designed to act an ill part in all her dramas: for in this instance, life most exactly resembles the stage, since it is often the same person who represents the villain and the hero; and he who engages your admiration today, will probably attract your contempt to-morrow. As Garrick, whom I regard in tragedy to be the greatest genius the world hath ever produced, sometimes condescends to play the fool; so did Scipio the Great, and Lælius the Wife, according to Horace, many years ago: nay, Cicero reports them to have been incredibly childifh.'- These, it is true, played the fool, like my friend Garrick, in jest only, but several eminent characters have, in numberless instances of their lives, played the fool egregiously in earnest; so far as to render it a matter of some doubt, whether their wisdom or folly was predominant; or whether they were better intitled to the applause or censure, the admiration or contempt, the love or hatred, of mankind.

Those persons, indeed, who have passed any time behind the scenes of this great theatre, and are thoroughly acquainted not only with the several disguises which are there put on, but also with the fantassic and capricious behaviour of the passions, who are the managers and directors of this theatre, (for as to reason the patentee, he is known to be a very idle fellow, and seldom to exert himself) may most probably have learned to understand the samous nil admirari of Horace, or in the English phrase, to stare at nothing.

L

e

d

IS

d

f

e

7,

A fingle bad act no more constitutes a villain in life, than a fingle bad part on the stage. The passions, like the managers of a playhouse, often force men upon parts, without consulting their judgment, and sometimes without any regard to their talents. Thus the man, as well as the player, may condemn what he himself acts; nay, it is common to see vice sit as aukwardly on some men, as the character of lago would on the honest face of Mr. William Mills.

Upon the whole, then, the man of candour and of true understanding is never hasty to condemn. He can censure an impersection, or even a vice, without rage against the guilty party. In a word, they are the same folly, the same childishness, the same ill-breeding, and the same ill-nature, which raise all the clamours and uproars both in life and on the stage. The worst of men generally have the words rogue and villain most in their mouths, as the lowest of all wretches are the aptest to cry out low in the pit.

CHAP. II.

Containing a conversation which Mr. Jones had with himself.

JONES received his effects from Mr. Allworthy's early in the morning, with the following answer to his letter:

SIR,

am commanded by my uncle to acquaint you, that as he did not proceed to those measures he had taken with you, without the greatest deliberation, and after the fullest evidence of your unworthiness, so will it be always out of your power to Vol. I.

Bb 'cause

cause the least alteration in his resolution. He expresses great surprize at your presumption in saying you have resigned all pretentions to a young lady to whom it is impossible you should ever have had any, her birth and fortune having made her so infinitely your superior. Lastly, I am commanded to tell you, that the only instance of your compliance with my uncle's inclinations, which he requires, is, your immediately quitting this country. I cannot conclude this without offering you my advice, as a christian, that you would seriously think of amending your life; that you may be assisted with grace so to do, will be always the prayer of

'Your humble fervant,
'W. BLIFIL,'

Many contending passions were raised in our hero's mind by this letter; but the tender prevailed at last over the indignant and irascible, and a flood of tears came seasonably to his assistance, and possibly prevented his missortunes from either turning his head, or bursting his heart.

He grew, however, foon as hamed of indulging this remedy; and starting up, he cried: 'Well then, I will give Mr. Allworthy the only instance he requires of my obedience. I will go this moment—' but whither? — why let fortune direct; since there is no other who thinks it of any consequence what becomes of this wretched person, it shall be a matter of equal indifference to myself. Shall I alone regard what no other— Ha! have I not reason to think there is another? — One whose value is above that of the whole world! — I may, I must imagine, 'my

y,

ad

to

18,

10

d

rs

US

I

e-

9

at

et

2

0

e

e,

who

'my Sophia is not indifferent to what becomes of me. Shall I then leave this only friend? — And such a friend? Shall I not stay with her? — Where? how can I stay with her? Have I any hopes of ever seeing her, though she was as desirous as myself, without exposing her to the wrath of her father? and to what purpose? Can I think of soliciting such a creature to consent to her own ruin? Shall I indulge any passion of mine at such a price? — Shall I lurk about this country like a thief, with such intentions? — No, I disdain, I detest the thought. Farewel, Sophia; farewel, most lovely, most beloved '— Here passion stopt his mouth, and found a vent at his eyes.

And now, having taken a refolution to leave the country, he began to debate with himself whither he should go. The world, as Milton phrases it, lay all before him; and Jones, no more than Adam, had any man to whom he might resort for comfort or assistance. All his acquaintance were the acquaintance of Mr. Allworthy, and he had no reason to expect any countenance from them, as that gentleman had withdrawn his savour from him. Men of great and good characters should indeed be very cautious how they discard their dependents; for the consequence to the unhappy sufferer is being discarded by all others.

What course of life to pursue, or to what business to apply himself, was a second consideration: and here the prospect was all a melancholy void. Every profession, and every trade, required length of time, and what was worse, money; for matters are so constituted, that 'nothing out of nothing,' is not a truer maxim in physics than in politics; and every man

Bb 2

who is greatly destirute of money, is on that account entirely excluded from all means of acquiring it.

At last the ocean, that hospitable friend to the wretched, opened her capacious arms to receive him; and he instantly resolved to accept her kind invitation. To express myself less figuratively, he determined to go to sea.

This thought indeed no fooner fuggested itself, than he eagerly embraced it; and having presently hired horses, he set out for Bristol to put it in execution.

But before we attend him on this expedition, we shall refort a while to Mr. Western's, and see what farther happened to the charming Sophia.

CHAP. III.

Containing several dialogues.

THE morning in which Mr. Jones departed, Mrs. Western summoned Sophia into her apartment, and having first acquainted her that she had obtained her liberty of her father, she proceeded to read her a long lecture on the subject of matrimony; which she treated not as a romantic scheme of happiness arising from love, as it hath been described by the poets; nor did she mention any of those purposes for which we are taught by divines to regard it as instituted by facred authority; she considered it rather as a fund in which prudent women deposite their fortunes to the best advantage, in order to receive a larger interest for them than they could have elsewhere.

When Mrs. Western had finished, Sophia answered:
That she was very incapable of arguing with a lady
of her aunt's superior knowledge and experience,
especial-

especially on a subject which she had so very little

confidered as this of matrimony.'

'Argue with me, child!' replied the other, 'I do not indeed expect it. I should have seen the world to very little purpose truly, if I am to argue with one of your years, I have taken this trouble, in order to instruct you. The ancient philosophers, such as Socrates, Alcibiades, and others, did not use to argue with their scholars. You are to consider me, child, as Socrates, not asking your opinion, but only informing you of mine.' From which last words the reader may possibly imagine, that this lady had read no more of the philosophy of Socrates, than she had of that of Alcibiades; and indeed we cannot resolve his curiosity as to this point.

'Madam,' cries Sophia, 'I have never prefumed to controvert any opinion of yours: and this fub'ject, as I faid, I have never yet thought of, and per-

' haps never may.'

'Indeed, Sophy,' replied the aunt, 'this diffimu-' lation with me is very foolish. The French shall as foon perfuade me, that they take foreign towns ' in defence only of their own country, as you can ' impose on me to believe you have never yet thought ferioufly of matrimony. How can you, child, affect to deny that you have confidered of contracting an alliance, when you so well know I am acquainted ' with the party with whom you defire to contract it? An alliance as unnatural and contrary to your interest, as a separate league with the French would be to the interest of the Dutch! But, however, if you ' have not hitherto confidered of this matter, I promife you it is now high time; for my brother is re-Bb 3 'folved

· folved immediately to conclude the treaty with Mr.

Blifil; and indeed I am a fort of guarantee in the

· affair, and have promifed your concurrence.'

'Indeed, Madam,' cries Sophia, 'this is the only inflance in which I must disobey both yourself and my subset. For this is a match which requires your

· my father. For this is a match which requires very

· little confideration in me to refuse.'

'If I was not as great a philosopher as Socrates himself,' returned Mrs. Western, 'you would overcome my patience. What objection can you have to the young gentleman?'

A very folid objection in my opinion,' fays So-

phia. - 'I hate him.'

Will you never learn a proper use of words?' answered the aunt. 'Indeed, child, you should confult Bailey's Dictionary. It is impossible you should there a man from whom you have received no injury.

hate a man from whom you have received no injury.
By hatred, therefore, you mean no more than dif-

like, which is no fufficient objection against your marrying of him. I have known many couples,

who have entirely difliked each other, lead very

comfortable, genteel lives. Believe me, child, I know these things better than you. You will allow me, I think, to have seen the world, in which I

have not an acquaintance who would not rather be

thought to diflike her hufband, than to like him.

'The contrary is such out-of-fashion romantic nonfense, that the very imagination of it is shocking.'

'Indeed, Madam,' replied Sophia, 'I shall never marry a man I dislike. If I promise my father never

to confent to any marriage contrary to his inclinations, I think I may hope he will never force me

into that flate contrary to my own.

· Incli-

'Inclinations!' cries the aunt, with some warmth.
'Inclinations! I am astonished at your assurance. A
'young woman of your age, and unmarried, to talk
'of inclinations? But whatever your inclinations
'may be, my brother is resolved; nay, since you
'talk of inclinations, I shall advise him to hasten the
'treaty. Inclinations!'

Sophia then flung herself upon her knees, and tears began to trickle from her shining eyes. She entreated her aunt, 'to have mercy upon her, and not to resent for cruelly her unwillingness to make herself miserable; often urging, that she alone was concerned, and

that her happiness only was at stake.

As a bailiff, when well authorifed by his writ, having possessed humself of the person of some unhappy debtor, views all his tears without concern: in vain the wretched captive attempts to raise compassion; in vain the tender wise berest of her companion, the little prattling boy, or frighted girl, are mentioned as inducements to reluctance. The noble burntrap, blind and deaf to every circumstance of distress, greath soars above all the motives to humanity, and into the hands of the gaoler resolves to deliver his miserable prey.

Not less blind to the tears, or less deaf to every entreaty of Sophia, was the politic aunt, not less determined was the to deliver over the trembling maid into the arms of the gaoler Blifil. She answered with great impetuosity: 'So far, Madam, from your being concerned alone, your concern is the least, or surely the least important. It is the honour of your family which is concerned in this alliance; you are

only the inftrument. Do you conceive, miffres,

that an intermarriage between kingdoms, as when a daughter of France is married into Spain, the princess herself is alone considered in the match? Not, it is a match between two kingdoms, rather than between two persons. The same happens in great families, such as ours. The alliance between the families is the principal matter. You ought to have a greater regard for the honour of your family than for your own person; and if the example of a princess cannot inspire you with these noble thoughts, you cannot surely complain at being used no worse than all princesses are used.

'I hope, Madam,' cries Sophia, with a little elevation of voice, 'I shall never do any thing to disho-'nour my family; but as for Mr. Blifil, whatever 'may be the consequence, I am resolved against him,

' and no force shall prevail in his favour.'

Western, who had been within hearing during the greater part of the preceding dialogue, had now exhausted all his patience; he therefore entered the room in a violent passion, crying: 'D—n me then 'if shatunt ha'n, d—n me if shatunt, that's all—

that's all-d-n me if fhatunt.

Mrs. Western had collected a sufficient quantity of wrath for the use of Sophia; but she now transferred it all to the 'squire. 'Brother,' said she, 'it is asto'nishing that you will interfere in a matter which 'you had totally lest to my negotiation. Regard to 'my family hath made me take upon myself to be 'the mediating power, in order to rectify those mistakes in policy which you have committed in your 'daughter's education. For, brother, it is you; it is your preposterous conduct which hath eradicated

all the feeds that I had formerly fown in her tender ' mind. It is you yourfelf who have taught her 'disobedience.' Blood!' cries the 'fquire, foaming at the mouth, 'you are enough to conquer the patience of the devil! Have I ever taught my daughter disobedience? - Here she stands; speak ' honestly, girl, did ever I bid you be disobedient to ' me? Have I not done every thing to humour and to gratify you, and to make you obedient to me? And very obedient to me she was when a little child, before you took her in hand and spoiled her, by filling her head with a pack of court notions. Why, - why, - why, - did I not over-hear you telling her fhe must behave like a princes? You have ' made a Whig of the girl; and how should her father, or any body else, expect any obedience from 'her?' 'Brother,' answered Mrs. Western, with an air of great disdain, 'I cannot express the contempt. 'I have for your politicks of all kinds; but I will appeal likewise to the young lady herself, whether I ' have ever taught her any principles of disobedience? 'On the contrary, niece, have I not endeavoured to 'inspire you with a true idea of the several relations ' in which a human creature stands in society? Have I not taken infinite pains to fhew you, that the law of nature hath enjoined a duty on children to their parents? Have I not told you what Plato fays on that fubject? - A fubject on which you was so notoriously ignorant when you came first under my care, that I verily believe you did not know the relation ' between a daughter and a father.' 'Tis all a lie,' 'answered Western. 'The girl is no such a fool, as to ' live to eleven years old without knowing that fhe Bb 5

0

was her father's relation. O more than Gothic ' ignorance,' answered the lady ---- 'And as for , your manners, brother, I must tell you, they deserve 'a cane.' 'Why then you may gi'it me, if you ' think you are able,' cries the 'fquire; 'nay, I suppose your niece there will be ready enough to help you.' 'Brother,' faid Mrs. Western, 'though I despise you beyond expression, yet I shall endure ' your infolence no longer; fo I defire my coach may be got ready immediately, for I am resolved to leave 'your house this very morning.' 'And a good rid-' dance too,' answered he; 'I can bear your insolence no longer, an you come to that. Blood! it is almost enough of itself, to make my daughter undervalue my fense, when she hears you tell me every ' minute you despise me.' 'It is impossible, it is 'impossible,' cries the aunt, 'no one can undervalue ' fuch a boar.' 'Boar,' answered the 'squire, 'I am ' no boar; no, nor ass; no, nor rat neither, Madam. Remember that-I am no rat. I am a true Englishman, and not of your Hanover breed, that have eat up the nation.' 'Thou art one of those wife men, cries fhe, whose nonsensical principles have undone the nation; by weakening the hands of our government at home, and by discouraging our friends, and by encouraging our enemies abroad. Ho, are you come back to your politics,' cries the 'fquire, 'as for those I despise them as much as I do a "f-t." Which last word he accompanied and graced with the very action, which, of all others, was the most proper to it. And whether it was this word, or the contempt exprest for her politics, which most affected Mrs. Western, I will not determine; but she flew

e

e

m

a-

10

at

fe

es

ds

ng

d.'

he

ed he

or af-

The

ew

flew into the most violent rage, uttered phrases improper to be here related, and instantly burst out of the house. Nor did her brother or her niece think proper either to stop or to follow her: for the one was so much possessed by concern, and the other by anger, that they were rendered almost motionless.

The 'fquire, however, fent after his fifter the same holla which attends the departure of a hare, when she is first started before the hounds. He was indeed a great master of this kind of vociferation, and had a holla proper for the most occasions in life.

Women who, like Mrs. Western, know the world, and have applied themselves to philosophy and politics, would have immediately availed themselves of the present disposition of Mr. Western's mind; by throwing in a few artful compliments to his understanding at the expence of his absent adversary; but poor Sophia was all simplicity. By which word we do not intend to infinuate to the reader, that she was silly, which is generally understood as a synonimous term with simple: for she was indeed a most sensible girl, and her understanding was of the first rate; but she wanted all that useful art which semales convert to so many good purposes in life, and which, as it rather arises from the heart than from the head, is often the property of the silliest of women.

ing From Jeff tech 200 and the set f

Staw Bulk - Sales of the book of the

en neueroper a tara layaren e etra garanten

-mi solumin bars C H A P. I I V. is of omi well

A picture of a country gentlewoman taken from the life.

R. Western having finished his holla, and taken a little breath, began to lament, in very pathetic terms, the unfortunate condition of men, who are, says he, always whipt in by the humours of some d—n'd b—or other. I think I was hard run enough by your mother for one man; but after giving her a dodge, here's another b—follows me upon the foil; but curse my jacket if I will be run down in this manner by

any o'um.

Sophia never had a fingle dispute with her father, till this unlucky affair of Blifil, on any account, except in defence of her mother, whom she had loved most tenderly, though fhe loft her in the eleventh year of her age. The 'fquire to whom that poor woman had been a faithful upper fervant all the time of their marriage, had returned that behaviour, by making what the world calls a good hufband. He very feldom fwore at her (perhaps not above once a week) and never beat her: The had not the least occasion for jealousy, and was perfect mistress of her time; for the was never interrupted by her hufband, who was engaged all the morning in his field exercises, and all the evening with bottle companions. She scarce indeed ever faw him but at meals; where she had the pleasure of carving those dishes which she had before artended at the dressing. From these meals she retired about five minutes after the other fervants, having only flayed to drink the king over the water. Such were, it feems, Mr. Western's orders: for it was a maxim with him, that women CHAP.

of

ta

Chap. 4.

n

k

r.

at

women should come in with the first dish, and go out after the first glass. Obedience to these orders was perhaps no difficult task: for the conversation (if it may be so called) was seldom such as could entertain a lady. It consisted chiefly of hallooing, singing, relations of sporting adventures, b—d—y, and abuse of women, and of the government.

These however, were the only seasons when Mr. Western saw his wife: for when he repaired to her bed, he was generally fo drunk that he could not fee; and in the sporting season he always rose from her before it was light. Thus was fhe perfect mistress of her time; and had befides a coach and four usually at her command; though unhappily indeed the badness of the neighbourhood, and of the roads, made this of little use: for none who had fet much value on their necks would have paffed through the one, or who had fet any value on their hours, would have vifited the other. Now, to deal honestly with the reader, fhe did not make all the return expected to fo much indulgence; for the had been married against her will, by a fond father, the match having been rather advantageous on her fide: for the 'fquire's estate was upwards of 3000 l. a-year, and her fortune no more than a bare 8000 1 Hence perhaps the had contracted a little gloominess of temper: for fhe was rather a good fervant than a good wife; nor had fhe always the gratitude to return the extraordinary degree of roaring mirth with which the 'Iquire received her, even with a good-humoured finile. She would, moreover, fometimes interfere with matters which did not concern her, as the violent drinking of her hufband, which in the gentleft terms fhe would take some of the few opportunities he gave her of

remonstrating against. And once in her life, she very earnestly entreated him to carry her for two months to London, which he peremptorily denied; nay, was angry with his wife for the request ever after, being well as fured, that all the husbands in London are cuckolds,

For this last, and many other good reasons, Western at length heartily hated his wife; and as he never concealed this hatred before her death, so he never forgot it afterwards; but when any thing in the least sourced him, as a bad scenting day, or a distemper among his hounds, or any other such missfortune, he constantly vented his spleen by invectives against the deceased; saying:— 'If my wife was alive now, she

would be glad of this.'

These invectives he was especially desirous of throwing forth before Sophia: for as he loved her more than he did any other, so he was really jealous that she had loved her mother better than him. And this jealousy Sophia seldom failed of heightening on these occasions: for he was not contented with violating her ears with the abuse of her mother; but endeavoured to force an explicit approbation of all this abuse, with which desire he could never prevail upon her by any promise or threats to comply.

Hence some of my readers will, perhaps, wonder that the 'squire had not hated Sophia as much as he had hated her mother: but I must inform them, that hatred is not the effect of love, even through the medium of jealousy. It is, indeed, very possible for jealous persons to kill the objects of their jealousy, but not to hate them. Which sentiment being a pretty hard morse, and bearing something of the air of a paradox, we shall leave the reader to chew the cud upon it to the end

of the chapter.

CHAP.

· t

· to

A

e

16

an

ad

ufy

C2-

er

ed

my

der he

that

me-

ous t to

rfel,

hall

end

AP.

CHAP. V.

The generous behaviour of Sophia towards her aunt.

SOPHIA kept filence during the foregoing speech of her father, nor did she once answer otherwise than with a sigh; but as he understood none of the language, or, as he called it, lingo, of the eyes, so he was not satisfied without some further approbation of his sentiments; which he now demanded of his daughter; telling her, in the usual way: 'he expected she was ready to take the part of every body against him, as she had always done that of the bear mother.' Sophia remaining shill silent, he cried out: 'What art dumb? why dost unt speak? Was not thy mother a dead be to me? answer me that. What, I suppose you despise your father too, and don't think him good enough to speak to?'

'For heaven's fake, Sir,' answered Sophia, 'do' not give so cruel a turn to my filence. I am sure I would sooner die than be guilty of any disrespect towards you; but how can I venture to speak, when every word must either offend my dear papa, or convict me of the blackest ingratitude as well as implety to the memory of the best of mothers: for such,

'I am certain my mamma was always to me?'

'And your aunt, I suppose, is the best of sisters 'too!' replied the squire. 'Will you be so kind as to allow that she is a b—? I may fairly insist upon that, I think.'

'Indeed, Sir,' fays Sophia, 'I have great obligations to my aunt. She hath been a fecond mother

to me.

'And a fecond wife to me too,' returned Western;
's fo you will take her part too! you won't confess that
's she hath acted the part of the vilest sister in the
'world?'

'Upon my word, Sir,' cries Sophia, 'I must belie my heart wickedly if I did. I know my aunt and

'you differ very much in your ways of thinking; but

'I have heard her a thousand times express the greatest affection for you; and I am convinced, so far from

her being the worst fister in the world, there are

' very few who love a brother better.'

'The English of all which is,' answered the 'squire, that I am in the wrong. Ay, certainly. Ay, to be fure, the woman is in the right, and the man in the

wrong always.'

' Pardon me, Sir,' cries Sophia, 'I do not fay fo.'

What don't you fay,' answered the father? 'you have the impudence to fay she's in the right; doth

it not follow then of course that I am in the wrong?

And perhaps I am in the wrong to fuffer fuch a pref byterian Hanoverian b—— to come into my

house. She may 'dite me of a plot for any thing I know, and give my estate to the government.'

'So far, Sir, from injuring you or your estate,' fays Sophia, 'if my aunt had died yesterday, I am convinced she would have left you her whole fortune.'

11

'I

ar

if

ing

fo t

pref

Whether Sophia intended it or no, I shall not prefume to affert; but certain it is, these last words penetrated very deep into the ears of her father, and produced a much more sensible effect than all she had said before. He received the sound with much the same action as a man receives a bullet in his head. He started, staggered, and turned pale. After which he t

n

e

ė

u

1

14

1

ys

n-

e.'

re-

oe-

nd

he

ach

ad.

ich

he

he remained filent above a minute, and then began in the following helitating manner: 'Yesterday! she 'would have left me her estate yesterday! would she?' Why yesterday! of all the days in the year? I suppose if she dies to-morrow she will leave it to somebody else, and perhaps out of the vamily: 'My aunt, Sir,' cries Sophia, 'hath very violent passions, and I can't 'answer what she may do under their instuence.'

'You can't!' returned the father, 'and pray who hath been the occasion of putting her into those violent passions? Nay, who hath actually put her into them? Was not you and she hard at it before I came into the room? Besides, was not all our quarrel about you? I have not quarrelled with sister this many years but upon your account; and now you would throw the whole blame upon me, as thos I should be the occasion of her leaving the estate out o'the vamily. I could have expected no better indeed, this is like the return you make to all the rest of my fondness.'

'I befeech you then,' cries Sophia, 'upon my knees' I befeech you, if I have been the unhappy occasion of this difference, that you will endeavour to make it up with my aunt, and not suffer her to leave your house in this violent rage of anger: The is a very good-natured woman, and a few civil words will sa-

tisfy her— Let me intreat you, Sir.

'So I must go and ask pardon for your fault, must 'I?' answered Western. 'You have lost the hare, 'and I must draw every way to find her again? Indeed, 'if I was certain'— Here he stopt, and Sophia throwing in more intreaties, at length prevailed upon him; so that after venting two or three bitter sarcastical expressions against his daughter, he departed as fast as ne Vol. 1. Cc could

could to recover his fifter, before her equipage could

be gotten ready.

Sophia then returned to her chamber of mourning, where the indulged herfelf (if the phrase may be allowed me) in all the luxury of tender grief. She read overmore than once the letter which fhe had received from Jones; her muff too was used on this occasion: and the bathed both thefe, as well as herfelf, with her In this fituation, the friendly Mrs. Honour exerted her utmost abilities to comfort her afflicted mistress. She ran over the names of many young gentlemen: and having greatly commended their parts and persons, assured Sophia that she might take her choice of any. These methods must have certainly been used with some success in disorders of the like kind, or so fkilful a practitioner as Mrs. Honour would never have ventured to apply them; 'nay, I have heard that the college of chambermaids hold them to be as fovereign remedies as any in the female difpenfary; but whether it was that Sophia's difease differed, inwardly, from those cases with which it agreed in external fymptoms, I will not affert; but, in fact, the good waiting-woman did more harm than good, and at last so incensed her mistress (which was no easy matter) that with an angry voice she dismissed her from her presence.

CHAP. VI.

Containing great variety of matter.

THE 'squire overtook his sister just as she was stepping into the coach, and partly by solicitations, prevailed upon her to order her horses back into their quarters. He succeeded in

his

fo

fit

pe

m

hir

Wa

fee

fici

e

18

m

e-

ly,

nal

od aft

er)

ner

was and

der

d in

this

this attempt without much difficulty: for the lady was, as we have already hinted, of a most placable disposition, and greatly loved her brother, though she despised his parts, or rather his little knowledge of the world.

Poor Sophia, who had first set on foot this reconciliation, was now made the facrifice to it. They both concurred in their censures on her conduct; jointly declared war against her; and directly proceeded to counsel, how to carry it on in the most vigorous manner. For this purpose, Mrs. Western proposed not only an immediate conclusion of the treaty with Allworthy; but as immediately to carry it into execution; faying: 'That there was no other way to fuc-' ceed with her niece but by violent methods, which ' fhe was convinced Sophia had not fufficient resolu-' tion to refift. By violent,' fays fhe, 'I mean rather hafty measures: for as to confinement or absolute force, no fuch things must or can be attempted. Our plan must be concerted for a surprize, and not for a ftorm.

These matters were resolved on, when Mr. Bliss came to pay a visit to his mistress. The 'squire no sooner heard of his arrival, than he stept aside, by his sister's advice, to give his daughter orders for the proper reception of her lover; which he did with the most bitter execrations and denunciations of judgment on her resusal.

The impetuosity of the 'squire bore down all before him; and Sophia, as her aunt very wisely foresaw, was not able to resist him. She agreed, therefore, to see Bliss, though she had scarce spirits or strength sufficient to utter her assent. Indeed, to give a peremptory

tory denial to a father whom fhe fo tenderly loved, was no easy task. Had this circumstance been out of the case, much less resolution than what she was really mistress of, would, perhaps, have served her; but it is no unusual thing to ascribe those actions entirely to fear, which are in a great measure produced by love.

In pursuance, therefore, of her father's peremptory command, Sophia now admitted Mr. Blifil's visit. Scenes, like this, when painted at large, afford, as we have observed, very little entertainment to the reader. Here, therefore, we shall strictly adhere to a rule of Horace; by which writers are directed to pass over all those matters, which they despair of placing in a shining light. A rule, we conceive, of excellent use as well to the historian as to the poet: and which, if sollowed, must, at least, have this good effect, that many a great evil (for so all great books are called) would thus be reduced to a small one.

It is possible the great art used by Blissi at this interview would have prevailed on Sophia to have made another man in his circumstances her consident, and to have revealed the whole secret of her heart to him; but she had contracted so ill an opinion of this young gentleman, that she was resolved to place no considence in him: for simplicity, when set on its guard, is often a match for cunning. Her behaviour to him, therefore, was entirely forced, and indeed such as is generally prescribed to virgins upon the second formal visit from one who is appointed for their husband.

But the Blifil declared himself to the squire perfectly satisfied with his reception; yet that gentleman, who in company with his sister had overheard all, was not so well pleased. He resolved, in pursuance of the

advice

fo

advice of the fage lady, to push matters as forwards as possible; and addressing himself to his intended son-in-law in the hunting phrase, he cry'd after a loud holla: 'Follow her, boy, follow her; run in, run in, 'that's it, honeys. Dead, dead, dead— Never be bas hful, nor stand shall I, shall I?— Allworthy and 'I can finish all matters between us this afternoon, and

' let us ha' the wedding to-morrow.'

0

S

n

-

15

e

Blifil having conveyed the utmost fatisfaction into his countenance, answered: 'As there is nothing, 'Sir, in this world, which I so eagerly desire as an alliance with your family, except my union with the most amiable and deserving Sophia, you may easily imagine how impatient I must be to see myself in possession of my two highest wishes. If I have not therefore importuned you on this head, you will impute it only to my fear of offending the lady, by endeavouring to hurry on so blessed and event, faster than a strict compliance with all the rules of decency and decorum will permit. But if by your interest, Sir, she might be induced to dispense with any formalities.'—

'Formalities! with a pox!' answered the 'squire, 'Pooh, all stuff and nonsense, I tell thee, she shall ha' thee to-morrow; you will know the world better hereafter, when you come to my age. Women never gi' their consent, man, if they can help it, 'tis not the fashion. If I had staid for her mother's consent, I might have been a batchelor to this day.—
To her, to her, co to her, that's it, you jolly dog.

I tell thee fhat ha' her to morrow morning.

Blifil suffered himself to be overpowered by the forcible rhetoric of the squire; and it being agreed Cc 3 that

that Western should close with Allworthy that very afternoon, the lover departed home, having sirst earnestly begged that no violence might be offered to the lady by this haste, in the same manner as a popish inquisitor begs the lay-power to do no violence to the heretic, delivered over to it, and against whom the

church hath passed sentence.

And to fay the truth, Blifil had passed sentence against Sophia; for however pleased he had declared himself to Western with his reception, he was by no means satisfied, unless it was that he was convinced of the hatred and scorn of his mistress; and this had produced no less reciprocal hatred and scorn in him. It may, perhaps, be asked: Why then did he not put an immediate end to all surther courtship; I answer: for that very reason, as well as for several others equally good, which we shall now proceed to open to the reader.

Though Mr. Blifil was not of the complexion of Jones, nor ready to eat every woman he faw; yet he was far from being destitute of that appetite which is faid to be the common property of all animals. With this, he had likewise that distinguishing taste, which ferves to direct men in their choice of the object; or food of their feveral appetites; and this taught him to confider Sophia as a most delicious morfel, indeed to regard her with the same desires which an ortolan infpires into the foul of an Epicure. Now the agonies which affected the mind of Sophia rather augmented than impaired her beauty; for her tears added brightness to her eyes, and her breasts rose higher with her fighs. Indeed no one hath feen beauty in its highest luftre, who hath never feen it in diffress. Blifil therefore

h

h

ta

fore looked on this human ortolan with greater defire than when he viewed her laft; nor was his defires at all lessened by the aversion which he discovered in her to himself. On the contrary, this served rather to heighten the pleafure he proposed in rifling her charms, as it added triumph to lust; nay, he had some further views, from obtaining the absolute possession of her person, which we detest too much even to mention; and revenge itself was not without its share in the gratifications which he promifed himfelf. The rivalling poor Jones, and fupplanting him in her affections, added another spur to his pursuit, and promifed an other additional rapture to his enjoyment. d

Belides all these views, which to some scrupulous persons may seem to savour too much of malevolence, he had one prospect, which few readers will regard with any great abhorrence. And this was the effate of Mr. Western; which was all to be settled on his daughter and her iffue; for fo extravagant was the affection of that fond parent, that provided his child would but confent to be miferable with the hufband he chose, he cared not at what price he purchased

f

H

t-

e-

For these reasons Mr. Blifil was so desirous of the match, that he intended to deceive Sophia, by pretending love to her; and to deceive her father and his own uncle, by pretending he was beloved by her. In doing this, he availed himself of the piety of Thwackum, who held, that if the end proposed was religious (as furely matrimony is) it mattered not how wicked were the means. As, to other occasions, he used to apply the philosophy of Squire, which taught, that the end was immaterial, so that the Cc 4

means were fair and confishent with moral rectitude. To say truth, there were few occurences in life on which he could not draw advantages from the precepts

Little deceit was indeed necessary to be practifed

of one or other of those great masters.

on Mr. Western; who thought the inclinations of his daughter of as little confequence, as Blifil himfelf conceived them to be; but as the fentiments of Mr. Allworthy were of a very different kind, so it was abfolutely necessary to impose on him. In this, however, Blifil was fo well affifted by Western, that he fucceeded without difficulty; for as Mr. Allworthy had been affured by her father, that Sophia had a proper affection for Blifil, and that all which he had fuspected concerning Jones was entirely false, Bliff had nothing more to do, than to confirm these affertions: which he did with fuch equivocations, that he preserved a salvo for his conscience; and had the satisfaction of conveying a lie to his uncle, without the guilt of telling one. When he was examined touching the inclinations of Sophia, by Allworthy, who faid: he would, on no account, be accessary to forcing a young lady into a marriage contrary to her own 'will,' he answered: 'That the real fentiments of young ladies were very efficult to be understood; that her behaviour to him was full as forward as he wished it, and that if he could believe her father, fhe had all the affection for him which any lover could defire.' 'As for Jones,' faid he, 'whom I am loath to call villain, though his behaviour to ' you, Sir, sufficiently justifies the appellation; his own vanity, or perhaps fome wicked views, might make him boaft of a fall hood; for if there had been 4 any

any reality in Miss Western's love to him, The greatness of her fortune would never have suffered him to desert her, as you are well informed he hath.

Laftly, Sir, I promise you I would not myself, for any consideration, no not for the whole world, con-

fent to marry this young lady, if I was not per-

fuaded fhe had all the passion for me which I desire

fhe fhould have, as said named as it desirenced in

This excellent method of conveying a fall hood with the heart only, without making the tongue guilty of an untruth, by the means of equivocation and impofture, hath quieted the conscience of many a notable deceiver; and yet when we consider that it is Omniscience on which these endeavour to impose, it may possibly seem capable of affording only a very supersicial comfort; and that this artful and refined distinction between communicating a lie, and telling one, is hardly worth the pains it costs them.

Allworthy was pretty well fatisfied with what Mr. Western and Mr. Bliss told him: and the treaty was now, at the end of two days, concluded. Nothing then remained previous to the office of the priest, but the office of the lawyers, which threatened to take up so much time, that Western offered to bind himself by all manner of covenants, rather than defer the happiness of the young couple. Indeed he was so very earnest and pressing, that an indifferent person might have concluded he was more a principal in this match than he really was: but this eagerness was natural to him on all occasions; and he conducted every scheme he undertook in such a manner, as if the success of that alone was sufficient to constitute the whole happiness of his life.

Cc 5

The

The joint importunities of both father and fon-inlaw would probably have prevailed on Mr. Allworthy, who brooked but ill any delay of giving happiness to others, had not Sophia herself prevented it, and taken measures to put a final end to the whole treaty, and to rob both church and law of those taxes which these wise bodies have thought proper to receive from the propagation of the human species in a lawful manner. Of which in the next chapter.

Pogini bas and CHAP. VII. of dimension

A strange resolution of Sophia, and a more strange stratagem of Mrs. Honour.

Though Mrs. Honour was principally attached to her own interest, the was not without some little attachment to Sophia. To say truth, it was very difficult for any one to know that young lady without loving her. She no sooner therefore heard a piece of news, which she imagined to be of great importance to her mistress, than quite forgetting the anger which she had conceived two days before, at her impleasant dismission from Sophia's presence, the ran hastily to inform her of the news.

The beginning of her discourse was as abrupt as her entrance into the room. 'O dear Ma'am,' says she, 'what doth your la'ship think? To be sure, I am frightened out of my wits; and yet I thought

- it my duty to tell your la'fhip, though perhaps it may make you angry, for we fervants don't always
- know what will make our ladies angry; for to be fure every thing is always laid to the charge of a
 - fervant. When our ladies are out of humour, to be

IS

e

re

fure we must be scolded; and to be sure I should not wonder if your la thip thould be out of humour; nay, it must surprize you certainly, ay, and shock ' you too.'- 'Good Honour! let me know it without any longer preface, fays Sophia; 'there are few things, I promife you, which will furprize, and fewer which will fhock me.' 'Dear Madam,' answered Honour, 'to be fure, I overheard my mafer talking to parlon Supple about getting a licence this very afternoon; and to be fure I heard him ' fay your la'fhip fhou'd be married to-morrow morning. Sophia turned pale at these words, and repeated eagerly, 'to-morrow morning! Yes, 'Ma'am,' replied the trufty waiting woman, 'I will ' take my oath I heard my mafter fay fo.' 'Honour,' fays Sophia, you have both furprized and shocked me to fuch a degree, that I have scarce any breath or spirits left. What is to be done in my dreadful 'fituation?' 'I wish I was able to advise your la'fhip, fays fhe. - 'Do advise me,' cries Sophia, pray dear Honour advise me. Think what you would attempt if it was your own case.' Indeed, Ma'am,' cries Honour, "I wish your la'ship and I could change fituations; that is, I mean, without hurting your la'lhip; for to be fure I don't wish you so bad as to be a servant; but because that if to be it was my cafe, I should find no manner of dif-' ficulty in it; for in my poor opinion, young 'fquire Bliff is a charming, fweet, handsome man. Don't mention fuch stuff, cries Sophia. Such 'fuff,' repeated Honour, 'why there. - Well, to be fure what's one man's meat is another man's poison, and the same is altogether as true of women. 'Honour,'

Honopr, fays Sophia, frather than submit to be the wife of that contemptible wretch, I would plunge a dagger into my heart.' 'O lud, Ma'am,' answered the other, 'I am size you frighten me out of my wits now. Let me befeech your la'fhip not to fuffer fuch wicked thoughts to come into your head. O lud, to be fure I tremble every inch of me, Dear Ma'am, confider, that to be denied christian burial, and to have your corpse buried in the highway, and a stake drove through you, as farmer Halfpenny was ferved at Ox Crofs, and, to be fure, his ghost has walked there ever fince; for feveral people have feen him. To be fure, it can be nothing but the devil which can put fuch wicked thoughts into the head of any body; for certainly it is less wicked to hurt all the world than one's own dear felf, and fo I have heard faid by more parlons than one. If your la'Thip hath fuch a violent aversion, and hates the young gentleman so very bad, that you can't bear to think of going into bed to him; for to be fure there may be fuch antipathies in nature, and one had lieverer touch a toad than the flesh of some people.

Sophia had been too much wrapt in contemplation to pay any great attention to the foregoing excellent discourse of her maid; interrupting her therefore, without making any answer to it, she said: 'Honour,' I am come to a resolution. I am determined to leave my father's house this very night; and if you have the friendship for me, which you have often professed, you will keep me company. That I will, Ma'am, to the world's end,' answered Honour: 'but I beg your la'ship to consider the consequence,

fequence, before you undertake any rash action. Where can your la'fhip possibly go?' There is,' replied Sophia, 'a lady of quality in London, a relation of mine, who fpent feveral months with my aunt in the country; during all which time the treated me with great kindness, and expressed so much pleasure in my company that fhe earnestly defired my aunt to fuffer me to go with her to Lon-As the is a woman of very great note, I shall eafily find her out, and I make no doubt of being 'very well and kindly received by her.' 'I would ' not have your la'ship too confident of that,' cries for the first lady I lived with used to 'invite people very earnestly to her house; but if ' fhe heard afterwards they were coming, fhe used to get out of the way. Besides, though this lady ' would be very glad to fee your la'ship, as to be fure 'any body would be glad to fee your la'fhip; yet when the hears your la'thip is run away from my ' mafter.' You are miftaken, Honour,' fays Sophia, 'She looks upon the authority of a father in a much lower light than I do; for the pressed me 'violently to go to London with her, and when I ' refused to go without my father's consent, she ' laughed me to fcorn, called me filly country girl, ' and faid I should make a pure loving wife, fince I could be fo dutiful a daughter. So I have no doubt but she will both receive me, and protect me too, 'till my father, finding me out of his power, can be ' brought to fome reason.'

'Well, but, Ma'am,' answered Honour, 'how doth your la'ship think of making your escape? Where will you get any horses or conveyance?

For as for your own horse, as all the servants know a little how matters fland between my mafter and your la'fhip, Robin will be hanged before he will fuffer it to go out of the stable without my mafler's express orders.' 'I intend to escape,' faid Sophia, 'by walking out of the doors when they are open. I thank heaven my legs are very able to carry me. They have supported me many a long evening, after a fiddle, with no very agreeable parte ner; and furely they will affift me in running from ' fo detestable a partner for lite.' 'O heav'n Ma'am, doth your lady hip know what you are fay-'ing?' cries Honour, 'would you think of walking about the country by night and alone?' ' alone,' antwered the lady, 'you have promifed to bear me company.' 'Yes to be fure,' cries Honour, 'I will follow your la'fhip through the world; but your la'fhip had almost as good be alone; for I shall not be able to defend you, if any robbers, or other villains, should meet with you Nay, I should be in as horrible a fright as your · la'ship; for to be certain, they would ravish us both. Besides, Ma'am, consider how cold the ' nights are now; we shall be frozen to death.' 'A ' good brifk pace,' answered Sophia, 'will preserve us from the cold; and if you cannot defend me from a villain, Honour, I will defend you; for I will take a pistol with me. There are two always ' charged in the hall.' ' Dear Ma'am, you frighten ' me more and more,' cries Honour, ' fure your ' la'fhip would not venture to fire it off! I had rather run any chance, than your la'fhip fhould do that.' 'Why fo,' fays Sophia, fmiling; 'would not

'not you, Honour, fire a piftol at any one who should attack your virtue?' 'To be fure, Ma'am, cries Honour, 'one's virtue is a dear thing, especially to us poor servants; for it is our livelihood, as a 'body may say; yet I mortally hate fire arms; for so many accidents happen by them.' 'Well, well, says Sophia, 'I believe I may ensure your virtue at a very cheap rate, without carrying any arms with us; for I intend to take horses at the very first town we come to, and we shall hardly be attacked in our way thither. Look'ee, Honour, I am resolved to go, and if you will attend me, I promise you I will reward you to the very utmost of my

power.

e

I

n

nr

1

do

ld

ot

This last argument had a stronger effect on Honour than all the preceding. And fince the faw her miftress so determined, she desisted from any further disfuafions. They then entered into a debate on ways and means of executing their project. Here a very stubborn difficulty occurred, and this was the removal of their effects, which was much more eafily got over by the mistress than by the maid: for when a lady hath once taken a refolution to run to a lover, or to run from him, all obstacles are considered as trifles. But Honour was inspired by no such motive; she had no raptures to expect, nor any terrors to fhun; and besides the real value of her clothes, in which confifted a great part of her fortune, fhe had a capricious fondness for several gowns, and other things; either because they became her, or because they were given her by fuch a particular person; because she had bought them lately, or because she had had them long: or for some other reasons equally good; so that

n

ft

in

that she could not endure the thoughts of leaving the poor things behind her, exposed to the mercy of Western, who, she doubted not, would in his rage

make them fuffer martyrdom.

The ingenious Mrs. Honour having applied all her oratory to diffuade her miftress from her purpose, when the found her politively determined, at last flarted the following expedient to remove her clothes. viz. to get herself turned out of doors that very evening. Sophia highly approved this method, but doubted how it might be brought about. 'Ma'am,' cries Honour, 'your la'fhip may trust that to me: we fervants very well know how to obtain this favour of our masters and mistresses; though fometimes indeed, where they owe us more wages than they can readily pay, they will put up with all our affronts, and will hardly take any warning we can give them; but the 'fquire is none of those; and fince your la'fhip is resolved upon setting out to-night, I warrant I get discharged this afternoon.' It was then resolved that she should pack up some linen and a night-gown for Sophia, with her own things; and as for all her other clothes, the young lady abandoned them with no more remorfe than the failor feels, when he throws over the goods of others in order to fave his own life.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing Scenes of altercation, of no very uncommon kind.

MRS. Honour had icarce fooner parted from her young lady, than fomething (for I would not like the old woman in Quivedo, injure the devil by any

et

ny

any false accusation, and possibly he might have no hand in it) but fomething, I fay, fuggested itself to her, that by facrificing Sophia and all her fecrets to Mr. Western, fhe might probably make her fortune. Many confiderations urged this discovery. The fair prospect of a handsome reward for so great and acceptable a service to the 'squire, tempted her avarice; and again, the danger of the enterprise she had undertaken; the uncertainty of its fuccess; night, cold, robbers, ravishers, all alarmed her fears. So forcibly did all these operate upon her, that she was almost determined to go directly to the 'fquire, and to lay open the whole affair. She was, however, too upright a judge to decree on one fide, before fhe had heard the other. And here, first a journey to London appeared very strongly in support of Sophia. eagerly longed to fee a place in which the fancied charms short only of those which a raptured faint imagines in heaven. In the next place, as fhe knew Sophia to have much more generofity than her mafter, fo her fidelity promised her a greater reward than she could gain by treachery. She then cross-examined all the articles which had raifed her fears on the other fide, and found, on fairly fifting the matter, that there was very little in them. And now both scales being reduced to a pretty even balance, her love to her mifirefs being thrown into the scale of her integrity, made that rather preponderate, when a circumstance struck upon her imagination, which might have had a dangerous effect, had its whole weight been fairly put into the other scale. This was the length of time which must intervene, before Sophia would be able to fulfil her promifes; for though the was intitled to her Vol. I. mother's Dd

mother's fortune, at the death of her father, and to the fum of 3000 l. left her by an uncle when the came of age; yet these were distant days, and many accidents might prevent the intended generolity of the young lady; whereas the rewards fhe might expect from Mr. Westernwere i ninediate. But while she was pursuing this thought, the good genius of Sophia, or that which prefided over the integrity of Mrs. Honour, or perhaps mere chance, fent an accident in her way, which at once preserved her fidelity, and even facili-

tated the intended bufiness.

Mrs. Western's maid claimed great superiority over Mrs. Honour, on feveral accounts. First, her birth was higher: for her great grandmother by the mother's fide, was a coufin, not far removed, to an Irish peer. Secondly, her wages were greater. And, laftly, fhe had been at London, and had of confequence feen more of the world. She had always behaved, therefore, to Mrs. Honour, with that referve, and had always exacted of her those marks of distinction, which every order of females preferves and requires in conversation with those of an inserior order. Now, as Honour did not at all times agree with this doctrine, but would frequently break in upon the respect which the other demanded, Mrs. Western's maid was not at all pleafed with her company: indeed, fhe earnestly longed to return home to the house of her mistress, where she domineered at will over all the other fervants. She had been greatly, therefore, disappointed in the morning, when Mrs. Western had changed her mind on the very point of departure, and had been in what is vulgarly called: a glouting humour ever fince. i i h

g

n

In this humour, which was none of the fweeteft. The came into the room where Honour was debating with herfelf, in the manner we have above related. Honour no fooner faw her, than fhe addressed her in the following obliging phrase. Soh! Madam, I find we are to have the pleafure of your company longer, which I was afraid the quarrel between my mafter and your lady would have robbed us of. 'I don't 'know, Madam,' answered the other, 'what you mean by we and us. I affure you I do not look on any of the servants in this house to be proper company for me. I am company, I hope, for their betters every day in the week. I do not speak on your account, Mrs. Honour; for you are a civilized young woman; and when you have feen a little more of the world, I should not be ashamed to walk with you in St. James's Park.' 'Hoity! toity!' cries Honour, 'Madam is in her airs, I protest. Mrs. Ho-' nour, forfooth! fure, Madam, you might call me by my fir-name; for though my lady calls me Honour, I have a fir-name as well as other folks. 'Ashamed to walk with me, quotha! marry, as good 'as yourself, I hope,' 'Since you make such a re-' turn to my civility,' faid the other, 'I must acquaint you, Mrs. Honour, that you are not fo good as me. In the country indeed one is obliged to take up with 'all kind of trumpery; but in town I visit none but the women of women of quality. Indeed, Mrs. Honour, there is some difference, I hope, between your and me.' 'I hope fo too,' answered Honour, 'there ' is some difference in our ages, and I think, in our persons.' Upon speaking which last words, she strutted by Mrs. Western's maid with the most pro-Dd a voking - woking air of contempt; turning up her nose, tossing her head, and violently boushing the hoop of her competitor with her own. The other lady put up one of her most malicious sneers, and said: 'Creature! you are below my anger; and it is beneath me to give ill words to such an audacious, saucy trollop; but, husly, I must tell you, your breeding shews the meanness of your birth as well as of your education; and both very properly qualify you to be the mean serving woman of a country girl. Don't abuse my lady,' cries Honour, 'I won't take that of you; she's as much better than yours as she is younger, and ten thousand times more hand-somer.'

Here ill luck, or rather good luck, fent Mrs. Western to see her maid in tears, which began to flow plentifully at her approach; and of which being afked the reason by her mistress, she presently acquainted her, that her tears were occasioned by the rude treatment of that creature there, meaning Honour. 'And, Madam,' continued fhe, 'I could have despised all the faid to me; but the hath had the audacity to affront your lady hip, and to call you ugly- Yes, Madam, the called you ugly, old cat, to my face. I could not bear to hear your ! lady hip called ugly.' - Why do you repeat her impudence fo often?' faid Mrs. Western. And then turning to Mrs. Honour, fhe afked her, how the had the affurance to mention her name with difrespect? 'Difrespect, Madam!' answered Honour, 'I never mentioned your name at all; I faid fomebody was not as handsome as my miffres, and to be fure you know that as well millov

as I.' 'Huffy,' replied the lady, 'I will make fuch a faucy trollop as yourfelf know, that I am onot a proper subject of your discourse. And if my brother doth not discharge you this moment, I will never fleep in his house again. I will find him out, and have you discharged this moment.' Discharged!' cries Honour, 'and suppose I am; there are more places in the world than one. Thank heaven, good fervants need not want places; and if you turn away all who don't think you handsome, you will want servants very foon; let me tell you that.'

Mrs. Western spoke, or rather thundered, in anfwer; but as fhe was hardly articulate, we cannot be very certain of the identical words: we shall therefore omit inferting a speech, which, at best, would not greatly redound to her honour. She then departed in fearch of her brother, with a countenance fo full of rage, that she resembled one of the furies rather than a human creature.

The two chambermaids being again left alone, began a fecond bout at altercation, which foon produced a combat of a more active kind. In this the victory belonged to the lady of inferior rank, but not without some loss of blood, of hair, and of lawn, and muslin. do more and control

rogarzanit no med with combineratio

Ponomic variety in the continue to the continue of the continu and made little at the little transparage week ride; her brother to evictive or and and redig

he read to himso none eminimizing on

CHAP. IX.

The wife demeanour of Mr. Western in the character of a magistrate. A hint to justices of peace, concerning the necessary qualifications of a clerk; with extraordinary instances of paternal madness, and final affection.

Ogicians fometimes prove too much by an argument, and politicians often over-reach themselves in a scheme. Thus had it like to have happened to Mrs. Honour, who, instead of recovering the rest of her clothes, had like to have stopped even those she had on her back from escaping: for the squire no sooner heard of her having abused his sister, than he swore twenty oaths he would send her to Bridewell.

Mrs. Western was a very good-natured woman, and ordinarily of a forgiving temper. She had lately remitted the trespass of a stage-coachman, who had overturned her post-chaise into a ditch; nay, she had even broken the law in refusing to prosecute a highwayman who had robbed her not only of a fum of money, but of her ear-rings; at the fame time d-ning her, and faying: 'fuch handsome b-s as you, don't want jewels to fet them off, and be d-n'd to you.' But now, fo uncertain are our tempers, and fo much do we at different times differ from ourselves, she would hear of no mitigation; nor could all the affected penitence of Honour, nor all the entreaties of Sophia for her own fervant, prevail with her to defift from earnestly defiring her brother to execute justices hip (for it was indeed a fyllable more than justice) on the wench.

But

d

d

14

18

of

f

n

ıt

But luckily the clerk had a qualification, which no clerk to a justice of peace ought ever to be without, namely, some understanding in the law of this realm. He therefore whispered in the ear of the justice, that he would exceed his authority by committing the girl to Bridewell, as there had been no attempt to break the peace; 'for I am afraid, Sir,' says he, 'you' cannot legally commit any one to Bridewell only 'for ill-breeding.'

In matters of high importance, particularly in cases relating to the game, the justice was not always attentive to these admonitions of his clerk: for, indeed, in executing the laws under that head, many justices of peace suppose they have a large discretionary power. By virtue of which, under the notion of searching for, and taking away engines for the destruction of the game, they often commit trespasses, and sometimes selony, at their pleasure.

But this offence was not of quite fo high a nature, nor fo dangerous to the fociety. Here, therefore, the justice behaved with some attention to the advice of his clerk: for, in fact, he had already had two informations exhibited against him in the King's-bench,

and had no curiofity to try a third.

The 'squire, therefore, putting on a most wise and significant countenance, after a presace of several hum's and ha's, told his sister, that, upon more mature deliberation, he was of opinion that 'as there was 'no breaking up of the peace, such as the law,' says he, 'calls breaking open a door, or breaking a hedge, 'or breaking a head, or any such fort of breaking; 'the matter did not amount to a felonious kind of a 'thing, nor trespasses nor damages, and, therefore, 'there was no punishment in the law for it.'

Dd 4

Mrs.

Mrs. Western said: 'She knew the law much bet'ter; that she had known fervants very severely pu'nished for affronting their masters;' and then named a certain justice of the peace in London, 'who,' she said, 'would commit a servant to Bridewell, at any

time, when a master or mistress desired it.'

'Like enough,' cries the 'squire, 'it may be so in 'London; but the law is different in the country.' Here followed a very learned dispute between the brother and sister concerning the law, which we would insert, if we imagined many of our readers could understand it. This was, however, at length referred by both parties to the clerk, who decided it in favour of the magistrate; and Mrs. Western was, in the end, obliged to content herself with the satisfaction of having Honour turned away; to which Sophia herself very readily and chearfully consented.

Thus fortune, after having diverted herfelf, according to custom, with two or three frolicks, at last disposed all matters to the advantage of our heroine; who indeed succeeded admirably well in her deceit, considering it was the first she had ever practifed. And, to say the truth, I have often concluded, that the honest part of mankind would be much too hard for the knavish, if they could bring themselves to incur the guilt, or thought it worth their while to take

the trouble.

Honour acted her part to the utmost perfection. She no sooner saw herself secure from all danger of Bridewell, a word which had raised most horrible ideas in her mind, than she resumed those airs which her terrors before had a little abated; and laid down her place with as much affectation of content, and indeed of

of contempt, as was ever practifed at the refignation of places of much greater importance. If the reader pleases, therefore, we chuse rather to say she resigned—which hath, indeed, been always held a synonimous expression with being turned out, or turned away.

Mr. Western ordered her to be very expeditious in packing: for his sister declared she would not sleep another night under the same roof with so impudent a slut. To work therefore she went, and that so earnessly, that every thing was ready early in the evening; when having received her wages, away packed she bag and baggage, to the great satisfaction of every one, but of none more than of Sophia; who, having appointed her maid to meet her at a certain place not far from the house, exactly at the dreadful and ghostly hour of twelve, began to prepare for her own denarture.

But first she was obliged to give two painful audiences, the one to her aunt, and the other to her father. In these Mrs. Western herself began to talk to her in a more peremptory stile than before; but her father treated her in so violent and outrageous a manner, that he frightened her into an affected compli-

ner, that he frightened her into an affected compliance with his will, which so highly pleased the good 'squire, that he changed his frowns into smiles, and his menaces into promises; he vowed his whole soul was wrapped in hers, that her consent (for so he construed the words: 'You know, Sir, I must not, nor 'can refuse to obey any absolute command of yours,') had made him the happiest of mankind. He then gave her a large bank-bill to dispose of in any trinkets

the pleased, and kissed and embraced her in the fondest manner, while tears of joy trickled from those eyes,

Dd 5

which

which a few moments before had darted fire and rage

against the dear object of all his affection.

Instances of this behaviour in parents are so common, that the reader, I doubt not, will be very little astonished at the whole conduct of Mr. Western. If he should, I own I am not able to account for it; since that he loved his daughter most tenderly, is, I think, beyond dispute. So indeed have many others, who have rendered their children most compleatly miserable by the same conduct: which, though it is almost universal in parents, hath always appeared to me to be the most unaccountable of all the absurdities which ever entered into the brain of that strange pro-

digious creature man.

The latter part of Mr. Western's behaviour had so strong an effect on the tender heart of Sophia, that it fuggested a thought to her, which not all the sophistry of her politic aunt, nor all the menaces of her father had ever once brought into her head. She reverenced her father so piously, and loved him so passionately, that fhe had scarce ever felt more pleasing fensations, than what arose from the share she frequently had of contributing to his amusement; and sometimes, perhaps, to higher gratifications; for he never could contain the delight of hearing her commended, which he had the fatisfaction of hearing almost every day of her The idea, therefore, of the immense happiness The should convey to her father by her confent to this match, made a strong impression on her mind. Again, the extreme piety of fuch an act of obedience worked very forcibly, as fhe had a very deep fense of religion. Laftly, when the reflected how much the herfelf was to fuffer, being indeed to become little less than a facrifice,

e

75

is

n,

n.

25

a-

e,

crifice, or a martyr, to filial love and duty, fhe felt an agreeable tickling in a certain little passion, which though it bears no immediate affinity either to religion or virtue, is often so kind as to lend great assistance in

executing the purposes of both.

Sophia was charmed with the contemplation of for heroic an action; and began to compliment herfelf with much premature flattery, when Cupid, who lay hid in her muff, suddenly crept out, and, like Punchinello in a puppet-shew, kicked all out before him. In truth, (for we scorn to deceive our reader, or to vindicate the character of our heroine, by ascribing her actions to supernatural impulse,) the thoughts of her beloved Jones, and some hopes (however distant) in which he was very particularly concerned, immediately destroyed all which filial love, piety, and pride had, with their joint endeavours, been labouring to bring about.

But before we proceed any farther with Sophia, we

must now look back to Mr. Jones.

CHAP. X.

Containing several matters natural enough, perhaps, but Low.

THE reader will be pleased to remember, that we left Mr. Jones in the beginning of this book on his road to Bristol; being determined to seek his fortune at sea; or rather, indeed, to sly away from his fortune on shore.

It happened, (a thing not very unusual) that the guide who undertook to conduct him on his way, was unluckily unacquainted with the road: fo that having missed his right track, and being as hamed to ask information.

mation, he rambled about backwards and forwards till night came on, and it began to grow dark. Jones, fuspecting what had happened, acquainted the guide with his apprehensions; but he insisted on it, that they were in the right road, and added, it would be very strange if he should not know the road to Bristol; though, in reality, it would have been much stranger if he had known it, having never past through it in his life before.

Jones had not fuch implicit faith in his guide, but that on their arrival at a village he enquired of the first fellow he faw, whether they were in the road to Briftol: Whence did you come?' cries the fellow. 'No "matter,' fays Jones, a little haftily, 'I want to know if this be the road to Briftol, 'The road to Briftol!' cries the fellow, scratching his head, 'Why, mafter, I believe you will hardly get to Briftol this 'way to night.' 'Prithee, friend, then,' answered Jones, 'do tell us which is the way.'-- 'Why, ' Measter,' cries the fellow, 'you must be come out of your road the Lord knows whither: for thick ' way goeth to Glocester.' 'Well, and which way ' goes to Briftol?' faid Jones. 'Why, you be going ' away from Briffol,' answered the fellow- 'Then,' faid Jones, 'we must go back again.' 'Ay, you ' must,' said the fellow. 'Well, and when we come back to the top of the hill, which way must we 'take?' 'Why you must keep the strait road.' 'But 'I remember there are two roads, one to the right ' and the other to the left.' 'Why you must keep ' the right hand road, and then gu strait vorwards; only remember to turn first to your right, and then ' to your left again, and then to your right; and that ' brings

brings you to the 'squires, and then you must keep

' strait vorwards, and turn to the left,'

Another fellow now came up, and asked which way the gentlemen were going?—of which being informed by Jones, he first scratched his head, and then leaning upon a pole he had in his hand, began to tell him: 'That he must keep the right-hand road for about a 'mile, or a mile and half, or such a matter, and then, he must turn short to the lest, which would bring 'him round by Measter Jin Bearnes's.' 'But which is Mr. John Bearnes's?' says Jones. 'O Lord,' cries the fellow, 'why don't you know Measter Jin Bear-'nes? Whence did you come?'

These two sellows had almost conquered the patience of Jones, when a plain well looking man (who was indeed a quaker) accosted him thus: 'Friend, I 'perceive thou hast lost thy way; and if thou wilt take my advice, thou wilt not attempt to find it to 'night. It is almost dark, and the road is difficult to 'hit; besides, there have been several robberies committed lately between this and Bristol. Here is a 'very creditable good house just by, where thou may st' find good entertainment for thyself and thy cattle 'till morning.' Jones, after a little persuasion, agreed to stay in this place 'till the morning, and was conducted by his friend to the publick-house.

The landlord, who was a very civil fellow, told Jones: 'he hoped he would excuse the badness of his 'accommodation: for that his wife was gone from 'home, and had locked up almost every thing, and 'carried the keys along with her.' Indeed, the fact was, that a favourite daughter of her's was just married, and gone, that morning, home with her hus-

band;

band; and that she and her mother together, had almost stript the poor man of all his goods, as well as money: for though he had several children, this daughter only, who was the mother's favourite, was the object of her consideration; and to the humour of this one child she would, with pleasure, have sacrificed all the rest, and her husband into the bargain.

Though Jones was very unfit for any kind of company, and would have preferred being alone; yet he could not refift the importunities of the honest quaker; who was the more desirous of sitting with him, from having remarked the melancholy which appeared both in his countenance and behaviour; and which the poor quaker thought his conversation might in

fome measure relieve.

After they had past some time together, in such a manner that my honest friend might have thought himself at one of his silent meetings, the quaker began to be moved by fome spirit or other, probably that of curiofity; and faid: 'Friend, I perceive some fad difafter hath befallen thee; but pray be of comfort Perhaps thou hast lost a friend. If so, thou must confider we are all mortal. And why fhouldst thou grieve, when thou knowest thy grief will do thy friend no good? We are all born to affliction. I myfelf have my forrows as well as thee, and most probably greater forrows. Though I have a clear estate of 100 l. a year, which is as much as I want, and I have a conscience, I thank the Lord, void of offence. My constitution is found and strong, and there is no man can demand a debt of me, nor accuse me of an injury yet, friend, I should be concerned to think thee as miferable as myfelf. Here

fa

ke

u

ľ

of

n-

Here the quaker ended with a deep figh; and Jones presently answered: 'I am very forry, Sir, for your unhappiness, whatever is the occasion of it.' 'Ah! ' friend,' replied the quaker, 'one only daughter is the occasion. One who was my greatest delight upon earth, and who within this week is run away from ' me, and is married against my consent. I had pro-' vided her a proper match, a fober man, and one of ' fubstance; but the, forsooth, would chuse for her-' felf, and away fhe is gone with a young fellow not worth a groat. If the had been dead, as I suppose 'thy friend is, I should have been happy!' 'That is 'very strange, Sir,' said Jones. 'Why, would it not be better for her to be dead, than to be a beggar?" replied the quaker: 'for, as I told you, the fellow is ' not worth a groat; and furely the cannot expect ' that I shall ever give her a shilling. No, as she hath ' married for love, let her live on love if she can; ler ' her carry her love to market, and fee whether any one will change it into filver, or even into halfpence.' 'You know your own concerns best, Sir,' faid Jones. 'It must have been,' continued the quaker, 'a long premeditated scheme to cheat me: for they have known one another from their infancy; 'and I always preached to her against love—and told her a thousand times over it was all folly and wick-'edness. Nay, the cunning flut pretended to hearken ' to me, and to despise all wantonness of the flesh; and yet at last, broke out at the window two pair of stairs: for I began, indeed, a little to suspect her, and had locked her up carefully, intending the very next morning to have married her up to my liking. But the disappointed me within a few hours, and 'escaped

' escaped away to the lover of her own chusing, who ' lost no time: for they were married and bedded, ' and all within an hour.

But it shall be the worst hour's work for them both that ever they did; for they may starve, or beg, or steal together for me. I will never give ' either of them a farthing.' Here Jones starting up, cry'd: 'I really must be excused; I wish you would Leave me.' Come, come, friend,' faid the qua-'ker, 'don't give way to concern. You fee there 'are other people miserable besides yourself.' 'I see there are madmen and fools and villains in the world, cries Jones- 'But let me give you a piece of advice; " fend for your daughter and fon-in-law home, and don't be yourfelf the only cause of misery to one 'you pretend to love.' 'Send for her and her hufband home!' cries the quaker loudly, I would ' fooner fend for the two greatest enemies I have in 'the world!' 'Well, go home yourfelf; or where 'you please,' said Jones: 'for I will sit no longer " in fuch company." Nay, friend, 'answered the ' quaker, 'I fcorn to impose my company on any one.' He then offered to pull money from his poc ket, but Jones pushed him with some violence out of the room.

The fubject of the quaker's discourse had so deeply affected Jones, that he stared very wildly all the time he was speaking. This the quaker had observed, and this, added to the rest of his behaviour, inspired honest Broadbrim with a conceit, that his companion was, in reality, out of his senses. Instead of resenting the affront, therefore, the quaker was moved with compassion for his unhappy circumstances; and having

0

C

m

le

po

ving communicated his opinion to the landlord, he defired him to take great care of his guest, and to treat

him with the highest civility. The softer and to make the

'Indeed,' fays the landlord, 'I fhall use no fuch civility towards him: for it seems, for all his laced waist-coat there, he is no more a gentleman than myself: but a poor parish bastard bred up at a great squire's about thirty miles off, and now turned out of doors, (not for any good to be sure.) I shall get him out of my house as soon as possible. If I do lose my reckoning, the first loss is always the best. It is not above a year ago that I lost a silver-spoon.'

'What dost thou talk of a parish bastard, Robin?' answered the quaker. 'Thou must certainly be mis-

taken in thy man.'

'Not at all,' replied Robin, 'the guide, who knows 'him very well, told it me.' For, indeed, the guide had no fooner taken his place at the kitchen-fire, than he acquainted the whole company with all he knew,

or had ever heard concerning Jones.

The quaker was no fooner affured by this fellow of the birth and low fortune of Jones, than all compaffion for him vanished; and the honest, plain man went home fired with no less indignation than a duke would have felt at receiving an affront from such a

person.

y

e

d,

d

n

1g th

a-

ng

The landlord himself conceived an equal distain for his guest; so that when Jones rung the bell in order to retire to bed, he was acquainted that he could have no bed there.—Besides distain of the mean condition of his guest, Robert entertained violent suspicion of his intentions, which were, he supposed, to watch some favourable opportunity of robe Vol. I.

bing the house. In reality, he might have been very well eased of these apprehensions by the prudent precautions of his wife and daughter, who had already removed every thing which was not fixed to the free-hold; but he was by nature suspicious, and had been more particularly so fince the loss of his spoon. In short, the dread of being robbed totally absorbed the comfortable consideration that he had nothing to lose.

Jones being affured that he could have no bed, very contentedly betook himfelf to a great chair made with rufhes, when fleep, which had lately flunned his company in much better apartments, generoufly paid him

a vifit in his humble cell.

As for the landlord, he was prevented by his fears from retiring to reft. He returned therefore to the kitchen-fire, whence he could furvey the only door which opened into the parlour, or rather hole, where Jones was feated; and as for the window to that room, it was impossible for any creature larger than a cat to have made his escape through it.

CHAP. XI.

The adventure of a company of soldiers.

THE landlord having taken his feat directly opposite to the door of the parlour, determined to
keep guard there the whole night. The guide and
another fellow remained long on duty with him, tho
they neither knew his suspicions, nor had any of their
own. The true cause of their watching did indeed,
at length, put an end to it; for this was no other than
the strength and goodness of the beer, of which having
tippled a very large quantity, they grew at first very
noisy and vociferous, and afterwards fell both assets.

But

But it was not in the power of liquor to compose the fears of Robin. He continued still waking in his chair, with his eyes fixed stedsally on the door which led into the apartment of Mr. Jones, till a violent thundering at his outward gate called him from his seat, and obliged him to open it; which he had no sooner done, than his kitchen was immediately full of gentlemen in red coats, who all rushed upon him in as tumultuous a manner, as if they intended to take his little castle by storm.

The landlord was now forced from his post to furnish his numerous guests with beer, which they called for with great eagerness; and upon his second or third return from the cellar, he saw Mr. Jones standing before the fire in the midst of the soldiers; for it may easily be believed, that the arrival of so much good company should put an end to any sleep, unless that from which we are to be awakened only by the

last trumpet.

d

n

Y

ut

The company having now pretty well fatisfied their thirst, nothing remained but to pay the reckoning, a circumstance often productive of much mischief and discontent among the inferior rank of gentry; who are apt to find great difficulty in assessing the sum, with exact regard to distributive justice, which directs, that every man shall pay according to the quantity which he drinks. This difficulty occurred upon the present occasion; and it was the greater, as some gentlemen had, in their extreme hurry, marched off, after their first draught, and had entirely forgot to contribute any thing towards the said reckoning.

A violent dispute now arose, in which every word may be said to have been deposed upon oath; for the

Ee 2

oaths

bing the house. In reality, he might have been very well eased of these apprehensions by the prudent precautions of his wife and daughter, who had already removed every thing which was not fixed to the free-hold; but he was by nature suspicious, and had been more particularly so since the loss of his spoon. In short, the dread of being robbed totally absorbed the comfortable consideration that he had nothing to lose.

Jones being affured that he could have no bed, very contentedly betook himself to a great chair made with rushes, when sleep, which had lately shunned his company in much better apartments, generously paid him

a vifit in his humble cell.

As for the landlord, he was prevented by his fears from retiring to reft. He returned therefore to the kitchen-fire, whence he could furvey the only door which opened into the parlour, or rather hole, where Jones was feated; and as for the window to that room, it was impossible for any creature larger than a cat to have made his escape through it.

CHAP. XI.

The adventure of a company of soldiers.

THE landlord having taken his feat directly opposite to the door of the parlour, determined to keep guard there the whole night. The guide and another fellow remained long on duty with him, tho they neither knew his suspicions, nor had any of their own. The true cause of their watching did indeed, at length, put an end to it; for this was no other than the strength and goodness of the beer, of which having tippled a very large quantity, they grew at first very noisy and vociferous, and afterwards fell both assets.

But

r

But it was not in the power of liquor to compose the sears of Robin. He continued still waking in his chair, with his eyes fixed stedsastly on the door which led into the apartment of Mr. Jones, till a violent thundering at his outward gate called him from his seat, and obliged him to open it; which he had no sooner done, than his kitchen was immediately full of gentlemen in red coats, who all rushed upon him in as tumultuous a manner, as if they intended to take his little castle by storm.

The landlord was now forced from his post to furnish his numerous guests with beer, which they called for with great eagerness; and upon his second or third return from the cellar, he saw Mr. Jones standing before the fire in the midst of the soldiers; for it may easily be believed, that the arrival of so much good company should put an end to any sleep, unless that from which we are to be awakened only by the.

last trumpet.

or

re

n,

to

op-

to

ho'

eit

ed.

han

rery

But

The company having now pretty well fatisfied their thirst, nothing remained but to pay the reckoning, a circumstance often productive of much mischief and discontent among the inferior rank of gentry; who are apt to find great difficulty in assessing the sum, with exact regard to distributive justice, which directs, that every man shall pay according to the quantity which he drinks. This difficulty occurred upon the present occasion; and it was the greater, as some gentlemen had, in their extreme hurry, marched off, after their first draught, and had entirely forgot to contribute any thing towards the said reckoning.

A violent dispute now arose, in which every word may be said to have been deposed upon oath; for the

Ee 2

oaths

oaths were at least equal to all the other words spoken. In this controversy, the whole company spoke together, and every man seemed wholly bent to extenuate the sum which fell to his share; so that the most probable conclusion which could be foreseen, was, that a large portion of the reckoning would fall to the land-lord's share to pay, or (what is much the same thing) would remain unpaid.

All this while Mr. Jones was engaged in converfation with the ferjeant; for that officer was entirely unconcerned in the prefent dispute, being privileged, by immemorial custom, from all contribution.

The dispute now grew so very warm, that it seemed to draw towards a military decision, when Jones stepping forward, silenced all their clamours at once, by declaring that he would pay the whole reckoning, which indeed amounted to no more than three shillings and sour pence.

This declaration procured Jones the thanks and applause of the whole company. The terms honourable, noble, and worthy gentleman, resounded thro the room; nay, my landlord himself began to have a better opinion of him, and almost to disbelieve the account which the guide had given.

The serjeant had informed Mr. Jones, that they were marching against the rebels, and expected to be commanded by the glorious Duke of Cumberland. By which the reader may perceive (a circumstance which we have not thought necessary to communicate before) that this was the very time when the late rebellion was at the highest; and indeed the banditi were now marched into England, intending, as it was thought,

thought, to fight the king's forces, and to attempt

pushing forward to the metropolis.

Jones had fome heroic ingredients in his composition, and was a hearty well-wisher to the glorious cause of liberty and of the protestant religion. It is no wonder, therefore, that in circumstances which would have warranted a much more romantic and wild undertaking, it should occur to him to serve as a volunteer in this expedition.

Our commanding officer had faid all in his power to encourage and promote this good disposition, from the first moment he had been acquainted with it. He now proclaimed the noble resolution aloud, which was received with great pleasure by the whole company, who all cried out: 'God bless king George, and your honour;' and then added with many oaths: 'We will stand by you both to the last drops of our blood.'

The gentleman, who had been all night tippling . at the alehouse, was prevailed on by some arguments, which a corporal had put into his hand, to undertake the fame expedition. And now the portmanteau belonging to Mr. Jones being put up into the baggagecart, the forces were about to move forwards; when the guide stepping up to Jones, said: Sir, I hope 'you will confider that the horses have been kept out 'all night, and we have travelled a great ways out of our way. Jones was furprized at the impudence of this demand, and acquainted the foldiers with the merits of his cause, who were all unanimous in condemning the guide for his endeavours to put upon a gentleman. Some faid he ought to be tied neck and. heels; others, that he deserved to run the gantlope; and the ferjeant shook his cane at him, and wished he

Ee 3

had him under his command, fwearing heartily he

would make an example of him.

Jones contented himself, however, with a negative punishment, and walked off with his new comrades, leaving the guide to the poor revenge of cursing and reviling him, in which latter the landlord joined, saying: 'Ay, ay, he is a pure one, I warrant you. A 'pretty gentleman, indeed, to go for a soldier. He 'shall wear a laced waistcoat truly. It is an old pro-

verb and a true one, all is not gold that glifters. I

am glad my house is well rid of him.

All that day the ferjeant and the young foldier marched together; and the former, who was an archifellow, told the latter many entertaining stories of his campaigns, though in reality he had never made any; for he was but lately come into the service, and had, by his own dexterity, so well ingratiated himself with his officers, that he had promoted himself to a halberd; chiefly indeed by his merit in recruiting, in which he

was most excellently well fkilled.

Much mirth and festivity passed among the soldiers during their march. In which the many occurrences that had passed at their last quarters were remembered, and every one, with great freedom, made what jokes he pleased on his officers, some of which were of the coarser kind, and very near bordering on scandal. This brought to our hero's mind the custom which he had read of among the Greeks and Romans, of indulging, on certain festivals and solemn occasions, the liberty to slaves, of using an uncontrouled freedom of speech towards their masters.

Our little army, which confifted of two companies of foot, were now arrived at the place where they were

were to halt that evening. The ferjeant then acquainted his lieurenant, who was the commanding officer, that they had picked up two fellows in that day's march; one of which, he faid, was as fine a man as ever he faw (meaning the tippler) for that he was near fix feet, well proportioned, and frongly limbed; and the other, (meaning Jones), would do well enough for the rear rank.

The new foldiers were now produced before the officer, who having examined the fix feet man, he being first produced, came next to survey Jones: at the first fight of whom, the lieutenant could not help shewing some surprize; for, besides that he was very well dreffed, and was naturally genteel; he had a remarkable air of dignity in his look, which is rarely feen among the vulgar, and is indeed not inseparably annexed to the features of their superiors.

'Sir,' faid the lieutenant, 'my ferjeant informed, 'me, that you are defirous of enlifting into the company I have at present under my command; if so, Sir, we fhall very gladly receive a gentleman, who promifes to do much honour to the company, by

bearing arms in it.'

Line of Aller Albert William Millialdes Jones answered: 'That he had not mentioned any thing of enlifting himself: that he was most zealoufly attached to the glorious cause for which they were going to fight, and was very defirous of fer-' ving as a volunteer;' concluding with fome compliments to the lieutenant, and expressing the great fatisfaction he fhould have in being under his command.

The lieutenant returned his civility, commended his resolution, shook him by the hand, and invited him to dine with himself and the rest of the officers.

CHAP. XII.

The adventure of a company of officers.

THE lieutenant, whom we mentioned in the preceding chapter, and who commanded this party, was now near fixty years of age. He had entered very young into the army, and had ferved in the capacity of an enfign in the battle of Tannieres; here he had received two wounds, and had so well distringuished himself, that he was by the duke of Marlborough advanced to be a lieutenant, immediately after that battle.

In this commission he had continued ever since, viz. near forty years; during which time he had seen wast numbers preferred over his head, and had now the mortification to be commanded by boys, whose fathers were at nurse when he first entered into the service.

Nor was this ill fuccess in his profession solely owing to his having no friends among the men in power. He had the misfortune to incur the displeasure of his colonel, who for many years continued in the command of this regiment. Nor did he owe the implacable ill-will which this man bore him, to any neglect or deficiency as an officer, nor indeed to any fault in himself; but solely to the indiscretion of his wife, who was a very beautiful woman, and who, though the was remarkably fond of her husband, would not purchase his preferment at the expence of certain favours which the colonel required of her.

The poor lieutenant was more peculiarly unhappy in this, that while he felt the effects of the enmity of his colonel, he neither knew, nor fulpected, that he really bore him any; for he could not fulpect an ill-

will.

will, for which he was not conscious of giving any cause; and his wife, fearing what her husband's nice regard to his honour might have occasioned, contented herself with preserving her virtue, without

enjoying the triumphs of her conquest.

This unfortunate officer (for fo I think he may be called) had many good qualities, besides his merit in his profession; for he was a religious, honest, goodnatured man; and had behaved so well in his command, that he was highly esteemed and beloved, not only by the soldiers of his own company, but by the

whole regiment.

The other officers, who marched with him, were a French lieutenant, who had been long enough out of France to forget his own language, but not long enough in England to learn ours, fo that he really spoke no language at all, and could barely make himself understood, on the most ordinary occasions. There were likewise two ensigns, both very young fellows; one of whom had been bred under an attorney, and the other was son to the wife of a nobleman's butler.

As foon as dinner was ended, Jones informed the company of the merriment which had passed among the soldiers upon their march; 'and yet,' says he, 'notwithstanding all their vociferation, I dare swear 'they will behave more like Grecians than Trojans, 'when they come to the enemy.' 'Grecians and 'Trojans!' says one of the ensigns, 'who the devil 'are they? I have heard of all the troops in Europe, 'but never of any such as these.'

'Don't pretend to more ignorance than you have, 'Mr. Northerton,' faid the worthy lieutenant. 'I

Ee 5 'fup-

' fuppose you have heard of the Greeks and Trojans. though, perhaps, you never read Pope's Homer; who, I remember, now the gentleman mentions it,

compares the march of the Trojans to the cackling

of geefe, and greatly commends the filence of the

Grecians. And upon my honour, there is great

' justice in the cadet's observation.'

Begar, me remember dem very well,' faid the French lieutenant, 'me ave read them at school in ' dans Madam Daciere, des Greek, des Trojan, dey ' fight for von woman, - ouy, ouy, me ave read all

dat.' ' D-n Homo with all my heart,' fays Northerton, 'I have the marks of him in my a-yet.

'There's Thomas of our regiment, always carries a ' Homo in his pocket: d-n me if ever I come at it,

' if I don't burn it. And there's Corderius, another * d-n'd fon of a whore that hath got me many a

" flogging."

'Then you have been at school, Mr. Northerton?'

faid the lieutenant.

' Ay d-n me, have I,' answered he, 'the devil take my father for fending me thither. The eld ' put wanted to make a parson of me, but d-n me,

'thinks I to myself, I'll nick you there, old cult:

' the devil a fmak of you nonfense, shall you ever ' get into me. There's Jemmy Oliver of our regi-

' ment, he narrowly escaped being a pimp too; and that would have been a thousand pities: for d-n

" me if he is not one of the prettieft fellows in the

' whole world; but he went farther than I with

' the old cull: for Jemmy can neither write nor ' read.'

· You

d

n

or

ou

'You give your friend a very good character,' faid the lieutenant, 'and a very deferved one, I dare fay; but prithee, Northerton, leave off that foolish as well as wicked custom of swearing: for you are decived, I promise you, if you think there is wit or politeness in it. I wish too, you would take my advice, and desist from abusing the clergy. Scandalous names and reflections cast on any body of men, must be always unjustifiable; but especially so, when thrown on so facred a function: for to abuse the body is to abuse the function itself; and I leave you to judge how inconsistent such behaviour is in men, who are going to fight in defence of the protestant religion.'

Mr. Adderly, which was the name of the other enfign, had fat hitherto kicking his heels and humming a tune, without feeming to liften to the discourse; he now answered: 'O Monsteur, on ne parle pas de la 'Religion dans la Guerre.' 'Well said, Jack,' cries Northerton, 'if la religion was the only matter, the 'parsons should fight their own battles for me.'

'I don't know, gentlemen,' fays Jones, 'what' may be your opinion; but I think no man can engage in a nobler cause than that of his religion; and I have observed in the little I have read of history, that no soldiers have fought so bravely, as those who have been inspired with a religious zeal: for my own part, though I love my king and country, I hope, as well as any man in it; yet the protestant interest is no small motive to my becoming a volunteer in the cause.'

Northerton now winked on Adderly, and whifpered to him flily: 'Smoke the prig', Adderly, fmoke 'him.'

'him.' Then turning to Jones, said to him: 'I am 'very glad, Sir, you have chosen our regiment to be a volunteer in: for if our parson should at any time take a cup too much, I find you can supply his place. I presume, Sir, you have been at the university; may I crave the savour to know what col-

' lege?'
' Sir,' answered Jones, 'so far from having been
' at the university, I have even had the advantage of

' yourfelf: for I was never at school.'

'I prefumed,' cries the enfign, 'only upon the 'information of your great learning.—' 'Oh! Sir,' answered Jones, 'it is as possible for a man to know 'fomething without having been at school; as it is 'to have been at school and to know nothing.'

'Well faid, young volunteer,' cries the lieutenant, upon my word, Northerton, you had better let him

' alone; for he will be too hard for you.'

Northerton did not very well relifh the farcasm of Jones, but he thought the provocation was scarce sufficient to justify a blow, or a rascal, or scoundrel, which were the only repartees that suggested themselves. He was, therefore, silent at present; but resolved to take the first opportunity of returning the jest by abuse.

It now came to the turn of Mr. Jones to give a toast, as it is called; who could not refrain from mentioning his dear Sophia. This he did the more readily, as he imagined it utterly impossible, that any one pre-

fent should guess the person he meant.

But the lieutenant, who was the toast-master, was not contented with Sophia only. He said he must have her sir-name; upon which Jones hesitated a little,

tle, and prefently after named Miss Sophia Western. Enfign Northerton declared he would not drink her health in the same round with his own toast, unless fomebody would vouch for her. 'I knew one So-'phy Western,' says he, 'that was lain with by half the young fellows at Bath; and, perhaps, this is the fame woman.' Jones very folemnly affured him of the contrary; afferting that the young lady he named was one of great fashion and fortune. 'Ay, 'ay,' fays the enfign, 'and fo fhe is; d-n me, it is the same woman; and I'll hold half a dozen of Burgundy. Tom French of our regiment brings ' her into company with us at any tavern in Bridge's 'Street.' He then proceeded to describe her person exactly, (for he had feen her with her aunt) and concluded with faying: 'That her father had a great estate ' in Somerfetshire.'

The tenderness of lovers can ill brook the least jesting with the names of their mistresses. However, Jones, though he had enough of the lover and of the hero too in his ditposition, did not resent these slanders as hastily as, perhaps, he ought to have done. To fay the truth, having feen but little of this kind of wit, he did not readily understand it, and for a long time imagined Mr. Northerton had really mistaken his charmer for fome other. But now turning to the ensign with a stern aspect, he said: 'Pray, Sir, chuse ' fome other fubject for your wit: for I promife 'you, I will bear no jesting with this lady's cha-'racter.' Jesting,' cries the other, 'd-n me if 'ever I was more in earnest in my life. Tom French of our regiment had both her and her aunt at 'Bath.' 'Then I must tell you in earnest,' cries Tones,

Jones, 'that you are one of the most impudent

rafcals upon earth.'

He had no fooner spoken these words, than the ensign, together with a volley of curses, discharged a bottle full at the head of Jones, which hitting him a little above the right temple, brought him instandy

to the ground.

The conqueror perceiving the enemy to lie motionless before him, and blood beginning to flow pretty plentifully from his wound, began now to think of quitting the field of battle, where no more honour was to be gotten: but the lieutenant interposed, by stepping before the door, and thus cut off his retreat.

Northerton was very importunate with the lieutenant for his liberty; urging the ill confequences of his stay, asking him, what he could have done less!

, Zounds!' fays he, 'I was but in jest with the fellow. I never heard any harm of Miss Western in

'my life.' 'Have not you?' faid the lieutenant,

then you richly deserve to be hanged, as well for making such jests, as for using such a weapon. You

' are my prisoner, Sir; nor shall you stir from hence

' till a proper guard comes to fecure you.'

Such an ascendant had our lieutenant over this enfign, that all that fervency of courage which had levelled our poor hero with the floor, would scarce have animated the said ensign to have drawn his sword against the lieutenant, had he then one dangling at his side; but all the swords being hung up in the room, were, at the very beginning of the fray, secured by the French officer. So that Mr. Northerton was obliged to attend the final issue of this affair.

The

ıt

le

7-

ty

of

ır

y

eof

s!

1-

in

ıt,

or

u

ce

ne-

ce

nis

gin

ay,

eraf-

he

The French gentleman and Mr. Adderly, at the defire of their commanding officer, had raifed up the body of Jones; but as they could perceive but little (if any) fign of life in him, they again let him fall, Adderly damning him for having blooded his waift-coat; and the Frenchman declaring: 'Begar me no tush de Engliseman, de mort me ave heard de Englise lay, law, what you call, hang up de man dat tush him last.'

When the good lieutenant applied himself to the door, he applied himself likewise to the bell; and the drawer immediately attending, he dispatched him for a sile of musqueteers and a surgeon. These commands, together with the drawer's report of what he had himself seen, not only produced the soldiers, but presently drew up the landlord of the house, his wise, and servants, and indeed every one else who happened at that time to be in the inn.

To describe every particular, and to relate the whole conversation of the ensuing scene, is not within my power, unless I had forty pens, and could, at once, write with them altogether, as the company now spoke. The reader must, therefore, content himself with the most remarkable incidents, and perhaps

he may very well excuse the rest.

The first thing done was securing the body of Northerton, who being delivered into the custody of fix men with a corporal at their head, was by them conducted from a place which he was very willing to leave, but it was unluckily to a place whither he was very unwilling to go. To say the truth, so whimsical are the desires of ambition, the very moment this youth had attained the above-mentioned honour, he

would have been well contented to have retired to fome corner of the world, where the fame of it should never have reached his ears.

It furprizes us, and so perhaps, it may the reader, that the lieutenant, a worthy and good man, should have applied his chief care, rather to secure the offender, than to preserve the life of the wounded person. We mention this observation, not with any view of pretending to account for so odd a behaviour, but lest some critic should hereafter plume himself on discovering it. We would have these gentlemen know we can see what is odd in characters as well as themselves, but it is our business to relate facts as they are; which when we have done, it is the part of the learned and sagacious reader to consult that original book of nature, whence every passage in our work is transcribed, though we quote not always the particular page for its authority.

The company which now arrived were of a different disposition. They suspended their curiosity concerning the person of the ensign, till they should see him hereaster in a more engaging attitude. At present, their whole concern and attention were employed about the bloody object on the floor; which being placed upright in a chair, soon began to discover some symptoms of life and motion. These were no sooner perceived by the company (for Jones was, at first, generally concluded to be dead) than they all fell at once to prescribing for him: (for as none of the physical order was present, every one there took

that office upon him.)

Bleeding was the unanimous voice of the whole room; but unluckily there was no operator at hand:

e

every one then cry'd: 'Call the barber;' but none stirred a step. Several cordials were likewise prescribed in the same inessective manner; till the landlord ordered up a tankard of strong beer, with a toast,

which he faid was the best cordial in England.

The person principally atsistant on this occasion, indeed the only one who did any service, or seemed likely to do any, was the landlady; she cut off some of her hair, and applied it to the wound to stop the blood; she fell to chasing the youth's temples with her hand; and having express great contempt for her husband's prescription of beer, she dispatched one of her maids to her own closet for a bottle of brandy, of which, as soon as it was brought, she prevailed upon Jones, who was just returned to his senses, to drink a very large and plentiful draught.

Soon afterwards arrived the furgeon, who having viewed the wound, having fhaken his head, and blamed every thing which was done, ordered his patient instantly to bed; in which place we think proper to leave him some time, to his repose, and shall here,

therefore, put an end to this chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

Containing the great address of the landlady; the great learning of a surgeon, and the solid skill in casuistry of the worthy lieutenant.

HEN the wounded man was carried to his bed, and the house began again to clear up from the hurry which this accident had occasioned, the landlady thus addressed the commanding officer: 'I am afraid, Sir,' said she, 'this young man did Vol. I.

not behave himself as well as he should do to your

honours; and if he had been killed, I suppose he

' had but his deferts; to be fure, when gentlemen admit inferior persons into their company, they of

to keep their diffance; but, as my first husband used

to fay, few of em know how to do it. For my own part, I am fure, I should not have suffered any fel-

· lows to include themselves into gentlemen's tompa-

'ny: but I thoft he had been an officer himfelf, till

the ferjeant told me he was but a recruit.'

'Landlady,' answered the lieutenant, 'you mistake the whole matter. The young man behaved 'himself extremely well, and is, I believe, a much

better gentleman than the enfign, who abufed him.

' If the young fellow dies, the man who struck him

will have most reason to be forry for it: for the regiment will get rid of a very troublesome fellow,

who is a scandal to the army; and if he escapes

from the hands of justice, blame me, Madam, that's all.'

'Ay! ay! good lack a-day!' faid the landlady,

who could have thost it? Ay, ay, ay, I am satisfied your honour will see justice done; and to be sure it

oft to be to every one. Gentlemen oft not to kill poor

' tolks without answering for it. A poor man hath
' a foul to be faved as well as his betters.'

'Indeed, Madam,' faid the lieutenant, 'you do
'the volunteer wrong; I dare fwear he is more of a

' gentleman than the officer.'

'Ay,' cries the landlady, 'why look you there 'now: well, my first husband was a wife man; he used to say: you can't always know the inside by

the outfide. Nay, that might have been well enough

it

lo 3

re

ne

by

ell

gh

enough too; for I never faw'd him till he was all over blood. Who could have thoft it! mayhap, ' fome young gentleman croffed in love. Good lack-' a-day! if he should die, what a concern it will be to his parents! why fure the devil must possess the wicked wretch to do fuch an act. To be fure, he ' is a fcandal to the army, as your honour fays: for most of the gentlemen of the army that ever I faw, are quite different fort of people, and look as if they would forn to spill any christian blood as ' much as any men, I mean, that is, in a civil way, ' as my first husband used to say. To be sure, when they come into the wars there must be blood-shed; but that they are not to be blamed for. The more of our enemies they kill there, the better, and I wish with all my heart, they could kill every mo-' ther's fon of them.'

'O fie! Madam,' faid the lieutenant finiling, ALL

is rather too bloody-minded a wifh.'

' Not at all, Sir,' answered she, 'I am not at all ' bloody-minded, only to our enemies, and there is on harm in that. To be fure it is natural for us to ' wish our enemies dead, that the wars may be at 'an end, and our taxes to be lowered: for it is a dreadful thing to pay as we do. Why now there ' is above forty shillings for window lights, and yet we have flopt up all we could; we have almost blinded the house I am sure: says I to the excise-' man, fays I, I think you oft to favour us, I am ' fure we are very good friends to the government; and fo we are for fartin: for we pay a mint of ' money to 'um. And yet I often think to myfelf, the government doth not imagine itself more obli-Ff 2

eged to us, than to those that don't pay 'um a far-

thing. Ay, ay; it is the way of the world.

She was proceeding in this manner, when the furgeon entered the room. The lieutenant immediately asked how his patient did? But he resolved him only by faying: 'Better, I believe, than he would have been by this time, if I had not been called; and even as it is, perhaps it would have been lucky if 'I could have been called fooner.' 'I hope, Sir,' faid the lieutenant, 'the skull is not fractured,' ' Hum,' cries the furgeon, 'fractures are not always the most dangerous symptoms. Contusions and lacerations are often attended with worse phæno-' mena, and with more fatal consequences than frac-People who know nothing of the matter conclude, if the skull is not fractured, all is well; ' whereas, I had rather fee a man's fkull broke all to ' pieces, than fome contufions I have met with.' 'I ' hope,' fays the lieutenant, 'there are no fuch fymp-' toms here.': 'Symptoms,' answered the surgeon, ' are not always regular nor conftant. I have known ' very unfavourable fymptoms in the morning change ' to favourable ones at noon, and return to unfa-' vourable ones again at night. Of wounds, indeed, it is rightly and truly faid: Nemo repente fuit turpissimus. I was once, I remember, called to a pa-' tient, who had received a violent contusion in his ' tibia, by which the exterior cutis was lacerated, fo ' that there was a profuse sanguinary discharge; and the interior membranes were fo divellicated, that ' the os, or bone, very plainly appeared through the ' aperture of the vulnus, or wound. Some febrile ' fymptoms intervening at the same time, (for the ' pulse

' pulse was exuberant, and indicated much phlebo-' tomy) I apprehended an immediate mortification. 'To prevent which, I presently made a large orifice' in the vein of the left arm, whence I drew twenty ounces of blood; which I expected to have found extremely fizy and glutinous, or indeed coagulated, 'as it is in pleuretic complaints; but, to my furprize, it appeared rofy and florid, and its confiftency differed little from the blood of those in perfect ' health.' I then applied a fomentation to the part, which highly answered the intention, and after three or four times dreffing, the wound began to discharge ' a thick pus or matter, by which means the cohelion ' --- but perhaps I do not make myself perfectly 'well understood.' 'No really,' answered the lieutenant, 'I cannot fay I understand a syllable.' 'Well, 'Sir, faid the furgeon, 'then I shall not tire your patience; in fhort, within fix weeks, my patient ' was able to walk upon his legs, as perfectly as he' ' could have done before he received the contufion.' ' I wish, Sir,' faid the lieutenant, 'you would be ' fo kind only to inform me, whether the wound this ' young gentleman hath had the misfortune to receive ' is likely to prove mortal?' 'Sir,' answered the furgeon, 'to fay whether a wound will prove mortal or not at first dressing, would be very weak and ' foolish presumption: we are all mortal, and symp-' toms often occur in a cure which the greatest of our ' profession could never foresee? - 'But do you think ' him in danger?' fays the other. 'In danger! ay, ' furely,' cries the doctor, 'who is there among us, who in the most perfect health can be faid not to be ' in danger? Can a man, therefore, with fo bad a Ff 3 ' wound

wound as this be faid to be out of danger? All I can fay at present is, that it is well I was called as I was, and perhaps it would have been better if I had been called fooner. I will fee him again early in the morning, and in the mean time let him be kept extremely quiet, and drink liberally of water-'Won't you allow him fack-whey?' faid the landlady. 'Ay, ay, fack-whey,' cries the doctor, ' if you will, provided it be very small.' 'And a 'little chicken-broth too?' added fhe .- 'Yes, yes, chicken-broth, faid the doctor, 'is very good.' ' Mayn't I make him fome jellies too?' faid the land-'Ay, ay,' answered the doctor, 'jellies are very good for wounds, for they promote cohesion. And, indeed, it was lucky fhe had not named foop or high fauces, for the doctor would have complied, rather than have loft the custom of the house.

The doctor was no fooner gone, than the landlady began to trumpet forth his fame to the lieutenant, who had not, from their fhort acquaintance, conceived quite fo favourable an opinion of his physical abilities as the good woman, and all the neighbourhood, entertained; (and perhaps very rightly), for though I am afraid the doctor was a little of a coxcomb, he might be nevertheless very much of a surgeon.

The lieutenant having collected from the learned discourse of the surgeon, that Mr. Jones was in great danger, gave orders for keeping Mr. Northerton under a very strict guard, designing in the morning to attend him to a justice of peace, and to commit the conducting the troops to Gloucester to the French lieutenant, who, though he could neither read, write, nor speak any language, was, however, a good officer.

In the evening our commander fent a meffage to Mr. Jones, that if a vifit would not be troublesome he would wait on him. This civility was very kindly and thankfully received by Jones, and the lieutenant accordingly went up to his room, where he found the wounded man much better than he expected; nay, Jones affured his friend, that if he had not received express orders to the contrary from the surgeon, he should have got up long ago: for he appeared to himself to be as well as ever, and selt no other inconvenience from his wound but an extreme soreness on that side of his head.

'I should be very glad,' quoth the lieutenant, 'if you was as well as you fancy yourself; for then you could be able to do yourself justice immediately: for when a matter can't be made up, as in a case of a blow, the sooner you take him out the better; but I am afraid you think yourself better than you are, and he would have too much advantage over you.'

'I'll try, however,' answered Jones, 'if you please, and will be so kind to lend me a sword; for I have none here of my own.'

'My fword is heartily at your fervice, my dear boy,' cries the lieutenant, kiffing him, 'you are a brave lad, and I love your fpirit; but I fear your ftrength: for fuch a blow, and so much loss of blood, must have very much weakened you; and though 'you feel no want of strength in your bed, yet you most probably would after a thrust or two. I can't consent to your taking him out to-night; but I hope 'you will be able to come up with us before we get

n

many days march advance; and I give you my ho-Ff 4, nour onour you shall have fatisfaction, or the man who hath injured you fhan't flay in our regiment.'

'I wish,' said Jones, 'it was possible to decide this matter to-night: now you have mentioned it to

' me, I shall not be able to rest.'

· 'O never think of it,' returned the other, 'a few days will make no difference. The wounds of ho-' nour are not like those in your body. They suffer ' nothing by the delay of cure. It will be altogether as well for you, to receive fatisfaction a week hence as now.

'But suppose,' faid Jones, 'I should grow worse, ' and die of the consequence of my present wound.'

'Then your honour,' answered the lieutenant, will require no reparation at all. I myfelf will do iustice to your character, and testify to the world vour intention to have acted properly if you had ' recovered.'

'Still,' replied Jones, 'I am concerned at the delay. I am almost afraid to mention it to you who ' are a foldier; but though I have been a very wild young fellow, still in my most serious moments, and

at the bottom, I am really a christian.'

' So am I too, I affure you,' faid the officer: 'and ' fo zealous a one, that I was pleafed with you at din-' ner for taking up the cause of your religion; and I am a little offended with you now young gentleman, that you should express a fear of declaring ' your faith before any one.'

'But how terrible must it be,' cries Jones, 'to any one who is really a christian, to cherish malice in his breaft, in opposition to the command of him who hath expressly forbid it? How can I bear to do 4 this t,

d

d

ie

lo ld

ıd

id n-

nd

e-

ng

ny

m

m do his this on a fick-bed? Or how fhall I make up my account, with fuch an article as this in my bosom

' against me?'

'Why, I believe there is fuch a command,' cries the lieutenant; 'but a man of honour can't keep it. And you must be a man of honour, if you will be in the army. I remember I once put the case to our chaplain over a bowl of punch, and he confessed there was much difficulty in it; but he faid, he hoped there might be a latitude granted to foldiers ' in this one instance; and to be sure it is our duty to hope fo: for who would bear to live without his honour? No, no, my dear boy, be a good christian as long as you live; but be a man of honour too. and never put up an affront; not all the books, nor all the parsons in the world, shall ever persuade me to that. I love my religion very well, but I love my honour more. There must be some mistake in . the wording the text, or in the translation, or in the understanding it, or somewhere or other. But however that be, a man must run the risque; for he must preserve his honour. So compose yourself tonight, and I promise you, you shall have an oppor-' tunity of doing yourself justice.' Here he gave Jones a hearty buss, shook him by the hand, and took his leave.

But though the lieutenant's reasoning was very satisfactory to himself, it was not entirely so to his friend. Jones therefore having revolved this matter much in his thoughts, at last came to a resolution, which the reader will find in the next chapter.

CHAP. XIV.

A most dreadful chapter indeed; and which few readers ought to venture upon in an evening, especially when alone.

JONES swallowed a large mess of chicken, or rather cock broth, with a very good appetite, as indeed he would have done the cock it was made of, with a pound of bacon into the bargain; and now, finding in himself no deficiency of either health or spirit, he resolved to get up and seek his enemy.

But first he sent for the serjeant, who was his first acquaintance among these military gentlemen. Unluckily, that worthy officer having, in a literal sense, taken his fill of liquor, had been some time retired to his bolster, where he was snoring so loud, that it was not easy to convey a noise in at his ears capable of drowning that which issued from his nostrils.

However, as Jones perfifted in his defire of feeing him, a vociferous drawer at length found means to diffurb his flumbers, and to acquaint him with the Of which the ferjeant was no fooner made message. fentible, than he arose from his bed, and having his clothes already on, immediately attended. Jones did not think fit to acquaint the ferjeant with his defign, though he might have done it with great fafety; for the halberdier was himself a man of honour, and had killed his man. He would therefore have faithfully kept this fecret, or indeed any other which no reward was published for discovering. But as Jones knew not those virtues in so short an acquaintance, his caution was, perhaps, prudent and commendable enough. He

He began, therefore, by acquainting the ferjeant, that as he was now entered into the army, he was as hamed of being without what was perhaps the most necessary implement of a soldier; namely, a sword: adding, that he should be infinitely obliged to him, if he could procure one. 'For which,' says he, 'I will give you any reasonable price; nor do I insist upon its being silver-hilted, only a good blade, and

' fuch as may become a foldier's thigh.'

The ferjeant, who well knew what had happened, and had heard that Jones was in a very dangerous condition, immediately concluded, from fuch a meffage, at fuch a time of night, and from a man in fuch a firuation, that he was light-headed. Now as he had his wit (to use that word in its common fignification) always ready, he bethought himself of making his advantage of this humour in the fick man. 'Sir,' fays he, 'I believe I can fit you. I have a most ex-' cellent piece of stuff by me. It is not indeed filver-· hilted, which, as you fay, doth not become a fol-' dier; but the handle is decent enough, and the ' blade one of the best in Europe. It is a blade that ' - a blade that - In fhort, I will fetch it you this in-' flant, and you shall see it and handle it ___ I am ' glad to fee your honour fo well with all my heart.'

Being inflantly returned with the fword, he delivered it to Jones, who took it and drew it; and then told the ferjeant it would do very well, and bid him

name his price.

1

e

The ferjeant now began to harangue in praise of his goods. He said, (nay he swore very heartily), that the blade was taken from a French officer of very high rank at the battle of Dettingen. I took it

'it myfelf,' fays he, 'from his fide, after I had 'knocked him o' the head. The hilt was a golden one. That I fold to one of our fine gentlemen; for there are some of them, an't please your homour, who value the hilt of a sword more than the blade.'

Here the other stopped him, and begged him to name a price. The serjeant, who thought Jones absolutely out of his senses, and very near his end, was afraid, lest he should injure his family by asking too little.— However, after a moment's hesitation, he contented himself with naming twenty guineas, and swore he would not sell it for less to his own brother.

'Twenty guineas,' fays Jones, in the utmost surprize, 'sure you think I am mad, or that I never saw a fword in my life. Twenty guineas, indeed! I did not imagine you would endeavour to impose upon me.— Here, take the sword— No, now I think on't, I will keep it myself, and shew it your officer in the morning, acquainting him, at the same time, what a price you asked me for it.'

The ferjeant, as we have faid, had always his wit (in fensu prædicto) about him, and now plainly saw that Jones was not in the condition he had apprehended him to be; he now therefore, counterseited as great surprize as the other had shewn, and said: 'I am certain, Sir, I have not asked you so much out of the way. Besides, you are to consider, it is the only sword I have, and I must run the risque of my officer's displeasure, by going without one myself. And truly, putting all this together, I don't think twenty shillings so much out of the way.'

id

n

1;

e

0

)-

0

'Twenty shillings!' cries Jones, 'why you just 'now asked me twenty guineas.' 'How!' cries the serjeant—'Sure your honour must have mistaken me; 'or else I mistook mysels— and indeed I am but half 'awake——Twenty guineas, indeed! no wonder 'your honour slew into such a passion. I say twenty 'guineas too— No, no, I meant twenty shillings, I 'assure you. And when your honour comes to consider every thing, I hope you will not think that so 'extravagant a price. It is indeed true, you may 'buy a weapon which looks as well for less money.'

Here Jones interrupted him, faying: 'I will be so 'far from making any words with you, that I will 'give you a shilling more than your demand.' He then gave him a guinea, bid him return to his bed, and wished him a good march; adding, he hoped to overtake them before the division reached Worcester.

The ferjeant very civilly took his leave, fully fatisfied with his merchandize, and not a little pleafed with his dexterous recovery from that false step into which his opinion of the sick-man's light-headedness

had betrayed him.

As foon as the ferjeant was departed, Jones rofe from his bed, and dressed himself entirely, putting on even his coat, which, as its colour was white, shewed very visibly the streams of blood which had flowed down it; and now, having grasped his new-purchased sword in his hand, he was going to issue forth, when the thought of what he was about to undertake laid suddenly hold of him, and he began to reslect that in a few minutes he might possibly deprive a human being of life, or might lose his own. 'Very well,' said he,

and in what cause do I venture my life? Why, in that of my honour. And who is this human being?

A rascal who hath injured and insulted me without provocation. But is not revenge forbidden by hea-

ven?- Yes, but it is enjoined by the world. Well,

but fhall I obey the world in opposition to the ex-

displeasure rather than be called ha coward

' fcoundrel? - I'll think no more; I am refolved, and

" must fight him."

The clock had now struck twelve, and every one in the house were in their beds, except the centinel who flood to guard Northerton, when Jones foftly opening his door, iffued forth in purfuit of his enemy, of whole place of confinement he had received a perfect description from the drawer. It is not easy to conceive a much more tremendous figure than he now exhibited, He had on, as we have faid, a light-coloured coat, covered with ftreams of blood. His face, which miffed that very blood, as well as twenty ounces more drawn from him by the furgeon, was pallid. Round his head was a quantity of bandage, not unlike a turban. In the right hand he carried a fword, and in the left a candle. So that the bloody Banquo was not worthy to be compared to him. In fact, I believe a more dreadful apparition was never raifed in a churchvard, nor in the imagination of any good people met in a winter evening over a Christmas fire in Somersetfhire.

When the centinel first saw our hero approach, his hair began gently to lift up his grenadier cap; and in the same instant his knees fell to blows with each other. Presently his whole body was seized with worse than

r.

1

3-

et

is

in

r.

m

an

an ague fit. He then fired his piece, and fell flat on his face.

Whether fear or courage was the occasion of his firing, or whether he took aim at the object of his terror, I cannot say. If he did, however, he had the

good fortune to mis his man.

Jones feeing the fellow fall, gueffed the cause of his fright, at which he could not forbear smiling, not in the least reslecting on the danger from which he had just escaped. He then passed by the fellow, who still continued in the posture in which he fell, and entered the room where Northerton, as he had heard, was confined. Here, in a solitary situation, he found—an empty quart-pot standing on the table, on which some beer being spilt, it looked as if the room had lately been inhabited; but at present it was entirely vacant.

Jones then apprehended it might lead to some other apartment; but, upon fearching all round it, he could perceive no other door than that at which he entered, and where the centinel had been posted. He then proceeded to call Northerton several times by his name; but no one answered; nor did this serve to any other purpose than to confirm the centinel in his terrors, who was now convinced that the volunteer was dead of his wounds, and that his ghost was come in search of the murtherer: he now lay in all the agonies of horror; and I wish, with all my heart, some of those actors, who are hereafter to represent a man frighted out of his wits, had feen him, that they might be taught to copy nature, instead of performing several antic tricks and gestures, for the entertainment and applause of the galleries.

Per-

Perceiving the bird was flown, at least despairing to find him, and rightly apprehending that the report of the firelock would alarm the whole house, our hero now blew out his candle, and gently stole back again to his chamber, and to his bed: whither he would not have been able to have gotten undiscovered, had any other person been on the same stair-case, save only one gentleman who was confined to his bed by the gout; for before he could reach the door to his chamber, the hall where the centinel had been posted, was half sull of people, some in their shirts, and others not half dress, all very earnestly enquiring of each other, what was the matter?

The foldier was now found lying in the same place and posture in which we just now less him. Several immediately applied themselves to raise him, and some concluded him dead: but they presently saw their mistake; for he not only struggled with those who laid their hands on him, but fell a roaring like a bull. In reality, he imagined so many spirits or devils were handling him; for his imagination being possessed with the horror of an apparition, converted every object he saw or felt, into nothing but ghosts and

fpectres.

At length he was over-powered by numbers, and got upon his legs; when candles being brought, and feeing two or three of his comrades present, he came a little to himself; but when they asked him what was the matter? he answered: I am a dead man that's 'all, I am a dead man, I can't recover it, I have 'feen him.' 'What hast thou seen, Jack?' says one of the foldiers. 'Why I have seen the young volunteer that was killed yesterday.' He then imprecated the most

most heavy curses on himself, if he had not seen the volunteer, all over blood, vomiting fire out of his mouth and nostrils, pass by him into the chamber where ensign Northerton was, and then seizing the ensign by the throat, sly away with him in a clap of thunder.

This relation met with a gracious reception from the audience. All the women present believed it firmly, and prayed heaven to defend them from murther. Amongst the men too, many had faith in the story; but others turned it into derision and ridicule; and a ferjeant who was present, answered very coolly: Young man, you will hear more of this for going to sleep, and dreaming on your post.'

The foldier replied: 'you may punish me if you please; but I was as broad awake as I am now; and the devil carry me away, as he hath the ensign, if I did not see the dead man, as I tell you, with eyes as big and as siery as two large

flambeaux.

The commander of the forces, and the commander of the house, were now both arrived: for the former being awake at the time, and hearing the centinel fire his piece, thought it his duty to rise immediately, though he had no great apprehensions of any mischies; whereas the apprehensions of the latter were much greater, lest her spoons and tankards should be upon the march, without having received any such orders from her.

Our poor centinel, to whom the fight of this officer was not much more welcome than the apparition, as he thought it, which he had feen before, again related the dreadful story, and with many additions of Vol. I. Gg blood

blood and fire: but he had the misfortune to gain no credit with either of the last-mentioned persons; for the officer, though a very religious man, was free from all terrors of this kind; besides, having so lately lest Jones in the condition we have seen, he had no suspicion of his being dead. As for the landlady, though not over religious, she had no kind of aversion to the doctrine of spirits; but there was a circumstance in the tale which she well knew to be false, as we shall inform the reader presently.

But whether Northerton was carried away in thunder or fire, or in whatever other manner he was gone; it was now certain, that his body was no longer in custody. Upon this occasion, the lieutenant formed a conclusion not very different from what the serjeant is just mentioned to have made before, and immediately ordered the centinel to be taken prisoner. So that, by a strange reverse of fortune, (though not very uncommon in a military life) the guard became

the guarded.

CHAP. XV.

The conclusion of the foregoing adventure.

Besides the suspicion of sleep, the lieutenant harboured another, and worse doubt against the poor centinel, and this was that of treachery: for as he believed not one syllable of the apparition, so he imagined the whole to be an invention, formed only to impose upon him, and that the fellow had, in reality, been bribed by Northerton to let him escape. And this he imagined the rather, as the fright appeared to him the more unnatural in one who had

n

e

the character of as brave and bold a man as any in the regiment, having been in feveral actions, having received feveral wounds, and, in a word, having behaved himfelf always like a good and valiant foldier.

That the reader, therefore, may not conceive the least ill opinion of such a person, we shall not delay a moment in rescuing his character from the imputation of this guilt.

Mr. Northerton then, as we have before observed, was fully fatisfied with the glory which he had obtained from this action. He had, perhaps, feen, or heard, or gueffed, that envy is apt to attend fame. that I would here infinuate, that he was heathenifhly inclined to believe in, or to worfhip the goddess Nemesis; for, in fact, I am convinced he never heard of her name. He was, besides, of an active disposition, and had a great antipathy to those close winter quarters in the castle of Gloucester, for which a justice of peace might possibly give him a Nor was he moreover free from some uneasy meditations on a certain wooden edifice, which I forbear to name, in conformity to the opinion of mankind, who, I think, rather ought to honour than to be ashamed of this building, as it is, or at least might be made, of more benefit to society than almost any other public erection. In a word, to hint at no more reasons for his conduct, Mr. Northerton was defirous of departing that evening, and nothing remained for him but to contrive the Quomodo, which appeared to be a matter of some difficulty.

Gg 2

Now

Now this young gentleman, though some-what crooked in his morals, was perfectly firsit in his perfon, which was extremely strong and well made. His face too was accounted handsome by the generality of women, for it was broad and ruddy, with tolerably good teeth. Such charms did not fail making an impression on my landlady, who had no little relish for this kind of beauty. She had, indeed, a real compassion for the young man; and hearing from the furgeon that affairs were like to go ill with the volunteer, the fuspected they might hereafter wear no benign aspect with the ensign. Having obtained, therefore, leave to make him a visit, and finding him in a very melancholy mood, which she confiderably heightened, by telling him there were fcarce any hopes of the volunteer's life, fhe proceeded to throw forth some hints, which the other readily and eagerly taking up, they foon came to a right understanding; and it was at length agreed, that the enfign fhould, at a certain fignal, afcend the chimney, which communicating very foon with that of the kitchen, he might there again let himself down; for which fhe would give him an opportunity, by keeping the coast clear.

But lest our readers, of a different complexion, should take this occasion of too hastily condemning all compassion as a folly, and pernicious to society, we think proper to mention another particular which might possibly have some little share in this action. The ensign happened to be at this time possessed of the sum of sifty pounds, which did indeed belong to the whole company: for the captain having quarrelled with his lieutenant, had entrusted the payment

ment of his company to the enfign. This money, however, he thought proper to deposit in my land-lady's hand, possibly by way of bail or security that he would hereafter appear and answer to the charge against him; but whatever were the conditions, certain it is, that she had the money, and the ensign his liberty.

The reader may, perhaps, expect, from the compassionate temper of this good woman, that when she saw the poor centines taken prisoner for a fact of which she knew him innocent, she should immediately have interposed in his behalf; but whether it was that she had already exhausted all her compassion in the above-mentioned instance, or that the features of this fellow, though not very different from those of the ensign, could not raise it, I will not determine; but far from being an advocate for the present prisoner, she urged his guilt to the officer, declaring, with uplisted eyes and hands, that she would not have had any concern in the escape of a murderer for all the world.

Every thing was now once more quiet; and most of the company returned again to their beds; but the landlady, either from the natural activity of her disposition, or from her fear for her plate, having no propensity to sleep, prevailed with the officers, as they were to march within little more than an hour, to spend that time with her over a bowl of punch.

Jones had lain awake all this while, and had heard great part of the hurry and buffle that had passed, of which he had now some curiosity to know the Gg 3 parti-

particulars. He therefore applied to his bell, which he rung at least twenty times without any effect; for my landlady was in such high mirth with her company, that no clapper could be heard there but her bwn, and the drawer and chambermaid, who were sitting together in the kitchen (for neither durst he sit up, nor she lie in bed alone) the more they heard the bell ring, the more they were frightened, and as

it were, nailed down in their places.

At last, at a lucky interval of chat, the found reached the ears of our good landlady, who prefently fent forth her fummons, which both her fervants instantly obeyed: 'Joe,' fays the mistress, don't you ' hear the gentleman's bell ring? Why don't you go 'up?' 'It is not my business,' answered the drawer, to wait upon the chambers. It is Betty chamber-' maid's!' ' If you come to that,' answered the maid, 'it is not my business to wait upon gentlemen. 'I have done it, indeed, sometimes; but the devil fetch me if ever I do again, fince you make your preambles about it.' The bell still ringing violently, their mistress fell into a passion, and swore, if the drawer did not go up immediately, fhe would turn him away that very morning. ' If you do, Ma-' dam,' fays he, 'I can't help it. I won't do another fervant's business.' She then applied herself to the maid, and endeavoured to prevail by gentle means: but all in vain, Betty was as inflexible as Joe. Both infifted it was not their business, and they would not do it.

The lieutenant then fell a laughing, and faid:
'Come, I will put an end to this contention;' and then turning to the servants, commended them for their

their resolution, in not giving up the point; but added, he was fure, if one would confent to go, the other would. To which proposal they both agreed in an inflant, and accordingly went up very lovingly and close together. When they were gone, the lieutenant appealed the wrath of the landlady, by fatisfying her why they were both fo unwilling to go alone.

They returned foon after, and acquainted their mifirefs, that the fick gentleman was fo far from being dead, that he spoke as heartily as if he was well; and that he gave his fervice to the captain, and fhould be very glad of the favour of feeing him before he marched.

The good lieutenant immediately complied with his defires, and fitting down by his bed-fide, acquainted him with the icene which had happened below, concluding with his intentions to make an example of the centinel.

Upon this, Jones related to him the whole truth, and earnestly begged him not to punish the poor soldier: 'who, I am confident,' fays he, 'is as innocent of the enfign's escape, as he is of forging any lie, or of endeavouring to impose on you.

The lieutenant hesitated a few moments, and then answered: 'Why, as you have cleared the fellow of one part of the charge, fo it will be impossible to prove the other; because he was not the only centinel. But I have a good mind to punish the rascal for being a coward. Yet who knows what effect the terror of fuch an apprehension may have? and to fay the truth, he hath always behaved well against Gg 4

460 THE HISTORY OF &c. Book VII.

'an enemy. Come, it is a good thing to fee any fight of religion in these fellows; so I promise you he hall be set at liberty when we march. But hark, the general beats. My dear boy, give me another bus. Don't discompose or hurry yourself; but remember the christian doctrine of patience, and I warrant you will soon be able to do yourself just stice, and to take an honourable revenge on the self low who hath injured you. The lieutenant then departed, and Jones endeavoured to compose himself to rest.

END of the FIRST VOLUME.



the program with a formular members, and

to weight site bankshapers, was as applying or all the world provide to a specific

Halle sand here, or bein term a svel

CON-

CONTENTS

OFTHE

FIRST VOLUME.

r t

uniefs pera

1004

Containing from erave matter, that the reader cannot BOOK I I and some Agreed

Containing as much of the birth of the Foundling, as is necessary or proper to acquaint the reader with in the beginning of this history.

CHAP. I.

The introduction to the work, or bill of fare to the feaft. Page r

CHAP. IL

A short description of 'squire Allworthy, and a fuller account of Miss Bridger Allworthy, his sister. 4

CHAP. III.

An odd accident which befel Mr. Allworthy, at his return home. The decent behaviour of Mrs. Deborah Wilkins, with some proper animadversions on bastards.

CHAP. IV.

The reader's neck brought into danger by a description, his escape, and the great condescension of Miss Bridget Allworthy.

CHAP. V.

Containing a few common matters, with a very uncommon observation upon them.

> CHAP. Gg 5

CHAP. VI.

Mrs. Deborah is introduced into the parish, with a simile. A short account of Jenny Jones, with the dissidualities and discouragements which may attend young women in the pursuit of learning. Page 18

CHAP. VII.

Containing such grave matter, that the reader cannot laugh once through the whole chapter, unless peradventure he should laugh at the author.

CHAP. VIII.

A dialogue between Mesdames Bridget and Deborah; containing more amusement, but less instruction, than the former.

CHAP. IX.

Containing matters which will furprise the reader. 33

CHAP. X.

The hospitality of Allworthy; with a short sketch of the characters of two brothers, a doctor and a captain, who were entertained by that gentleman.

CHAP. XI.

Containing many rules, and some examples, concerning falling in love: descriptions of beauty, and other more prudential inducements to matrimony.

CHAP. XII.

Containing what the reader may perhaps expect to find in it.

CHAP. XIII.

Which concludes the first book; with an instance of ingratitude, which, we hope, with supear unnatural. 52

BOOK

Am odd aceldent

BOOK II.

Containing scenes of matrimonial felicity in different degrees of life; and various other transactions during the first two years after the marriage between Captain Blifil and Miss Bridget Allworthy.

CHAP. I.

Shewing what kind of a history this is; what it is like, and what it is not like. Page 57

CHAP. II.

Religious cautions against shewing too much favour to bastards; and a great discovery made by Mrs. Deborah Wilkins.

CHAP. III.

The description of a domestic government founded upon rules directly contrary to those of Aristotle. 63

CHAP. IV.

Containing one of the most bloody battles, or rather duels, that were ever recorded in domestic history. 68

CHAP. V.

Containing much matter to exercise the judgment and restection of the reader.

CHAP. VI.

The trial of Partridge, the schoolmaster, for incontinency; the evidence of his wife; a short restection on the wisdom of our law; with other grave matters, which those will like best who understand them most.

....

CHAP. VII.

A short sketch of that felicity which rudent couples may extract from hatred; with a short apology for those people who overlook imperfections in their Page 91 friends.

CHAP. VIII.

A receipt to regain the lost affections of a wife, which hath never been known to fail in the most desperate cases. 96

Second what him XX J. P. A. W. is; what it

A proof of the infallibility of the foregoing receipt, in the lamentations of the widow, with other suitable decorations of death, such as physicians, &c. and an epitaph in the true stile.

BOOK III.

Containing the most memorable transactions which passed in the family of Mr. Allworthy, from the time when Tommy Jones arrived at the age of fourteen, till he attained the age of nineteen. In this book the reader may pick up some hints concerning the education of children.

CHAP. I.

Containing little or nothing.

CHAP. II.

The hero of this great history appears, with very bad A little tale, of fo LOW a kind, that fome may think it not worth their notice. A word or two concerning a 'squire, and more relating to a gamekeeper, and a schoolmaster. 109 CHAP.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The character of Mr. Square the philosopher, and of Mr. Thwackum the divine; with a dispute concerning—

Page 116

CHAP. IV.

Containing a necessary apology for the Author; and a childish incident, which perhaps requires an apology likewise.

CHAP. V.

The opinions of the divine and philosopher concerning the two boys; with some reasons for their opinions, and other matters.

CHAP. VI.

Containing a better reason still for the before mentioned opinions.

CHAP. VII.

In which the Author himself makes his appearance on the stage.

CHAP. VIII.

A childish incident, in which, however, is seen a goodnatured disposition in Tom Jones 138

CHAP. IX.

Containing an incident of a more heinous kind, with the comments of Thwackum and Square. 141

CHAP. X.

In which Master Blisil and Jones appear in different lights.

BOOK

466

BOOK IV.

Containing the time of a year.

CHAP. I.

Containing five pages of paper.

Page 140

CHAP. II.

A (hort hint of what we can do in the sublime, and a description of Miss Sophia Western.

CHAP. III.

Wherein the history goes back to commemorate a trifling incident that happened some years since; but, which, trifling as it was, had some future consequences. 157

CHAP. IV.

Containing fuch very deep and grave matters, that some readers, perhaps, may not relish it. 161

CHAP. V.

Containing matter accommodated to every tafte. 165

CHAP. VI.

An apology for the insensibility of Mr. Jones, to all the charms of the lovely Sophia; in which possibly we may, in a considerable degree, lower his character in the estimation of those men of wit and gallantry, who approve the heroes in most of our modern comedies. 173

CHAP. VII.

Being the Shortest chapter in this book.

179

CHAP. VIII.

A battle fung by the muse in the Homerican stile, and which none but the classical reader can tafte.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Containing matters of no very peaceable colour. Page 188

CHAP. X.

A story told by Mr. Supple, the curate. The penetration of 'squire Western. His great love for his daughter, and the return to it made by her.

9

3

CHAP. XI.

The narrow escape of Molly Seagrim, with some observations, for which we have been forced to dive pretty deep into nature.

CHAP. XII.

Containing much clearer matters; but which flowed from the same fountain with those in the preceding chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

A dreadful accident which befel Sophia. The gallant behaviour of Jones, and the more dreadful consequence of that behaviour to the young lady; with a short digression in favour of the semale sex. 209

CHAP. XIV.

The arrival of a surgeon. His operations, and a long dialogue between Sophia and her maid. 213

BOOK V.

Containing a portion of time, somewhat longer than half a year.

CHAP. I.

Of THE SERIOUS in writing, and for what purpose it is introduced. 222

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

In which Mr. Jones receives many friendly visits during his confinement; with some fine touches of the passion of love, scarce visible to the naked eye. Page 228

CHAP. III.

Which all who have no heart, will think to contain much ado about nothing. 235

CHAP. IV.

A little chapter, in which is contained a little in-

CHAP. V.

A very long chapter, containing a very great incident. 243

CHAP. VI.

By comparing which with the former, the reader may possibly correct some abuse which he hath formerly been guilty of in the application of the word Love.

CHAP. VII.

In which Mr. Allworthy appears on a sick-bed. 262

CHAP. VIII.

Containing matter rather natural than pleasing. 269

CHAP. IX.

Which, among other things, may ferve as a comment on that faying of Æschines, that DRUNKENNESS SHEWS THE MIND OF A MAN, AS A MIR-ROR REFLECTS HIS PERSON. 276

CHAR